



Presented to
The Library of
The Ontario College of
Education
The University of Toronto
by

Mrs. John D. Murray

as/hi
mca

ELI

Adap

EX

Louise S

THE
PUBLIC SCHOOL
ELEMENTARY FRENCH GRAMMAR

PART I.—ACCIDENCE

By AUGUSTE BRACHET

Adapted for the use of English Schools and Persons engaged in
Elementary Teaching

BY

THE REV. P. H. E. BRETTE, B.D.

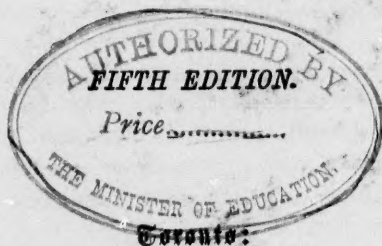
HEAD-MASTER OF THE FRENCH SCHOOL, CHRIST'S HOSPITAL

AND

GUSTAVE MASSON, B.A.

ASSISTANT MASTER AND LIBRARIAN, HARROW SCHOOL,

EXAMINERS IN THE UNIVERSITY OF LONDON



JAMES CAMPBELL & SON.

1878.

[All rights reserved.]

Entered according to the Act of the Parliament of Canada, in the
year one thousand eight hundred and seventy-eight, by JAMES
CAMPBELL & SON, in the office of the Minister of Agriculture.

40725

25/5/48

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

THE adapted translation of M. Brachet's "Nouvelle Grammaire Française," published by us at the beginning of the year, and which has been received with such signal success, was intended to meet the wants of pupils belonging to our ordinary Grammar Schools. On the present occasion, we address ourselves to those with whom philological details, and discussions of etymological or scientific problems would be completely out of place.

M. Brachet's "Petite Grammaire" simply gives the various rules both of accidence and of syntax, without attempting to enter into explanations which beginners nine or ten years old could not possibly understand. We have adopted the same method, but introduced into the work all modifications necessary for making our "ELEMENTARY FRENCH GRAMMAR" a practical and useful book for English class-rooms. Each section is followed by a set of questions and by exercises which should be written out and committed to memory after they have been corrected.

In many instances the Accidence alone is required for examination purposes; accordingly we have thought it best to print the Grammar in two distinct parts, containing, respectively, the Accidence and the Syntax, each part being followed by

a complete English-French and French-English Vocabulary. As the translation of the "Nouvelle Grammaire Française" is now adopted in most of our English Grammar and Preparatory Schools, so the "Petite Grammaire," by its cheapness and completeness, will commend itself to School Boards and Persons engaged in elementary teaching.

It gives us much pleasure to acknowledge the valuable assistance which Mr. E. JANAU, French Master at Blackheath Proprietary School, has given us in preparing the present volume.

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

THE sale of several thousand copies of this little work in less than six months is a sufficient proof that it has met a want felt by the persons for whom it was chiefly designed. The present edition, thoroughly revised and corrected, is accompanied by a very complete French-English and English-French Vocabulary, arranged by Mr. A. DUPUIS, B.A., First French Master at King's College School, to whom we have to tender our thanks for his kind assistance; beginners will thus be spared the necessity of referring to separate dictionaries.

We take the opportunity of reminding our friends that a supplementary set of Exercises on the Accidence and the Syntax will be ready very shortly,

P. H. ERNEST BRETTE.
GUSTAVE MASSON.

March, 1877.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION.

PAGE

Preliminary Remarks on the History and Geography of the French Language	1
Object and Definition of Grammar	3

BOOK I.—STUDY OF LETTERS.

CHAPTER I.

Of the French Alphabet	7
SECTION I.—Of the Vowels	8
SECTION II.—Of the Consonants	11

CHAPTER II.

Of Syllables.—Orthographic Signs	14
---	----

BOOK II.—STUDY OF WORDS.

CHAPTER I.

Of the Noun or Substantive	18
SECTION I.—Of Gender in Nouns	19
SECTION II.—Of Number in Nouns	20
SECTION III.—Formation of Substantives	23

CHAPTER II.

Of the Article	22
-----------------------	----

CHAPTER III.

Of the Adjective	24
SECTION I.—Formation of the Feminine of Adjectives	25
SECTION II.—Formation of the Plural of Adjectives	29

SECTION III.—Of the Degrees of Signification in Adjectives	40
SECTION IV.—Formation of Adjectives	42
SECTION V.—Agreement of the Adjective with the Substantive	45
SECTION VI.—Determinative Adjectives	45
I. Numeral Adjectives	45
Comparative Table of the Numeral Adjectives...	47
II. Demonstrative Adjectives	49
III. Possessive Adjectives	50
SECTION VII.—Indefinite Adjectives	52

CHAPTER IV.

Of the Pronoun	53
SECTION I.—Personal Pronouns	54
SECTION II.—Demonstrative Pronouns	58
SECTION III.—Possessive Pronouns	59
SECTION IV.—Relative Pronouns	61
SECTION V.—Indefinite Pronouns	63

CHAPTER V.

Of the Verb	66
1. Stem.—2. Termination	67
3. Numbers	67
4. Persons	67
5. Moods	67
6. Tenses	63
Auxiliary Verbs	69
Conjugation	70
SECTION I.—Auxiliary Verbs	71
I. Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb avoir (=to have)	71
II. Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb être (=to be)	75
SECTION II.—Active Verbs	79
I. First Conjugation.—Verb aimer (=to love)	79
II. Second Conjugation.—Verb finir (=to finish)	83
III. Third Conjugation.—Verb recevoir (=to receive)	86
IV. Fourth Conjugation.—Verb rompre (=to break)	89
SECTION III.—Conjugation of Verbs.—1. Interrogatively;	
2. Negatively; 3. Interrogatively with a negative	92
SECTION IV.—Remarks on the Formation of the Tenses	96
SECTION V.—Passive Verbs	98
Conjugation of the Passive Verb être aimé (=to be loved)	99

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

vii

SECTION VI.—Neuter Verbs	101
Conjugation of the Verb tomber (=to fall)	102
SECTION VII.—Reflexive Verbs	104
Conjugation of the Reflexive Verb se reposer (=to rest)	105
SECTION VIII.—Impersonal Verbs	109
Conjugation of the Impersonal Verb neiger (=to snow)	109
SECTION IX.—Irregular and Defective Verbs	110
1. First Conjugation: e	111
2. Second Conjugation in ir with Imperfect in issais	112
3. Second (direct) Conjugation in ir	113
4. Third Conjugation: oir	119
5. Fourth Conjugation: re	124
SECTION X.—Formation of the Verbs... ..	139
SECTION XI.—Rules for the Agreement of the Verb with its Subject... ..	141
CHAPTER VI.	
Of the Participle	142
CHAPTER VII.	
Of the Adverb	143
CHAPTER VIII.	
Of the Preposition	148
SECTION I.—Formation of the Simple Prepositions... ..	149
SECTION II.—Formation of Prepositive Locutions	150
SECTION III.—Government of Prepositions	150
CHAPTER IX.	
Of the Conjunction	152
CHAPTER X.	
Of the Interjection	154
Conjugation of the auxiliary verb avoir (=to have) negatively, interrogatively, and interrogatively with a negation	
	156

Conjugation of the auxiliary verb être (=to be) negatively, interrogatively, and interrogatively with a negation ...	160
Models of reflexive verbs conjugated negatively, interroga- tively, and interrogatively with a negation	164
Index	169
French-English Vocabulary	178
English-French Vocabulary	193

INTRODUCTION

PRELIMINARY REMARKS ON THE HISTORY AND GEOGRAPHY OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

Geography.—The French language extends over the whole of France, with the exception of one single province, Brittany, where, out of a population of 1,800,000, one million of individuals speak a language known by the name of **Bas-Breton**, and which is Celtic in its origin. To this important exception three small groups can be further added: the department of the North, where 200,000 inhabitants out of 1,200,000 speak the **Flemish language**, an offshoot from the German; the department of Lower-Pyrenees, where 120,000 persons speak the **Basque**, a very ancient idiom, the origin of which is unknown; finally, the department of Eastern Pyrenees (formerly the province of Roussillon), where 130,000 inhabitants speak the **Catalonian** language, derived from the Latin.

If the domains of the French language do not correspond exactly with the present territory of France, they include, on the other hand, several important districts outside the limits of that country, which represent an aggregate of a little more than 3,600,000 inhabitants, distributed as follows:—Belgium, 1,600,000; Germany, 1,000,000; French Switzerland, 400,000; finally, the Channel Islands, 60,000.

To these numbers we must add, out of Europe, the English colonies of Canada and Mauritius, which have retained the use of the French language, to say nothing of the French settlements (Algeria, Guiana, Senegal, etc.); we find thus 1,500,000 inhabitants more to be placed to the account of the French linguistic wealth.

With reference to the language, France is divided into two regions, **North** and **South**, the limits of which can be marked by tracing on the map a line extending from La Rochelle to Grenoble.

North of this line all cultivated people speak French; the peasants understand French, but make use of *patois* closely connected with it. These *patois* are four in number: 1. The **Norman**, spoken in the western district; 2. The **Picard**, in the north-western; 3. The **Lorrain**, in the eastern; 4. The **Burgundian**,

in the central and south-eastern. The analogy which these *patois* present with the French language has caused them to be collectively designated as *French patois*.

South of the line, linguistic circumstances are entirely different. Cultivated people, indeed, understand and write French; but in the relations they hold with each other they have recourse by preference (even in the large towns) to their own *patois*, which is an idiom as different from French as is Italian or Spanish. The inhabitants of the rural districts, notwithstanding the efforts made by the teachers of elementary schools, seldom speak anything but these *patois*, which are likewise four in number:—1. The **Gascon**, 2. The **Limousin**, 3. The **Languedocien**, and 4. The **Provençal**; the names sufficiently point out the provinces where these idioms are respectively used; they are called collectively *Provençal patois*, in opposition to the *French patois* spoken north of the line mentioned above.

History.—Everyone knows that the earliest inhabitants of Gaul, so far as we are aware, at least, were the *Galli*, who spoke a language belonging to the *Celtic* family, that is to say, akin to the idioms used in France by the natives of Lower Brittany, and, in the *British Isles*, by the *Scotch Highlanders*, the *Irish*, and the *Welsh*.

In the course of the first century, *B.C.*, the legions led by *Cæsar* conquered Gaul, and reduced it to the position of a Roman province. Far superior to the *Galli*, in point both of science and of civilisation, the *Romans* forced upon them the *Latin* language together with the yoke, in the same way as the *French* have forced their language upon the *Arabs* of *Algeria*.

At *Rome*, however, just as in the *France* of the nineteenth century, there were two languages co-existing: that of the people and of the peasants, the **popular Latin**, in a word; and that of the learned and the *litterati*, which is known as **classical** or **literary Latin**—the former was less fettered, the latter was more refined; but both often employed different words to express the same idea. Thus, whilst the *classical Latin* had the substantive *equus* as an equivalent for *horse*, the *colloquial Latin* said *caballus*; whence the *French cheval*.

It is the **colloquial Latin**, naturally, which the *Roman soldiers* introduced amongst the peasants of *Gaul*; these, in their turn, transformed it into *French*, by dint of altering the pronunciation. If we notice how the *English*, who speak the *French* language, all modify the pronunciation of the *French* in the same manner, we shall easily understand how *Latin* uttered by the *Galli* was altered

According to one uniform system; it is precisely this altered Latin which is called *French*. The colloquial Latin thus changed through the Celtic pronunciation, began to make its appearance about the fifth century, at the downfall of the Roman empire, as a distinct language, which the *savants* of the day contemptuously called *lingua Romana rustica* (the Latin of the peasants); hence the designation **Romance language**. The invasion of the barbarians was then destroying the empire; in the storm, everything bearing the Roman stamp disappeared—administration, schools, justice, aristocracy, literature; the *literary* Latin shared the same fate—that idiom which had been both the organ and the result of intellectual activity.

As colloquial Latin produced **French** in Gaul, so it became **Italian** in Italy, and **Spanish** in Spain. In France the *Romance language* was subdivided into two great varieties corresponding with the rival races of the north and south. North of the Loire we find the *Langue d'oïl*, or French, properly so called; south of the Loire, we have the *Langue d'oc*, or Provençal; these curious names result from the custom, frequently resorted to during the Middle Ages, of designating languages by the sign of affirmation *oui* (yes); *oui* was *oil* in the north, and *oc* in the south.

The northern language, the *Langue d'oïl*, was in its turn divided, during the eleventh century, into four principal dialects: the **Norman**, the **Picard**, the **Burgundian**, and, finally, the **French** dialect, which was originally the one spoken in the province called *Ile-de-France*. (In the Middle Ages the name *Français* was given specially to the inhabitants of *Ile-de-France*.) These four dialects were equal in power and in influence, because there did not exist then, as there does to-day, one single centre, one capital of the kingdom, capable of setting to the whole country the model of elegant speaking. The Dukes, whether of Normandy or of Burgundy, the equals of the Dukes of France (we mean, of *Ile-de-France*), employed respectively in their official acts the language of their province, Norman or Burgundian.

How is it that these four languages were subsequently reduced to one? Why is it that the dialect of *Ile-de-France* was adopted subsequently as the common language, rather than the Burgundian or the Norman? As long as the Capetian monarchs, humble lords of *Ile-de-France* and of *Orléanais*, remained destitute of all influence beyond the limits of their royal domain (that is to say, from the tenth to the twelfth century), the French dialect enjoyed no notoriety out of these two provinces. But with the beginning of the twelfth century, the petty Kings of France began to extend

their possessions at their neighbours' expense; they annexed successively Berry (1101), Picardy (1200), Touraine (1203), Normandy (1204), Champagne (1361), and carried with them into these newly-acquired provinces the dialect of Ile-de-France, the *French*, which took, in each of them, the place of the native dialect; and being the *language of the king*, it was soon adopted as the type of fashionable parlance. Resisting this invasion, the people alone, in each province, retained their old dialect, and refused to accept the French. As they ceased then to be used in writing, the idioms of Picardy, Burgundy, and Normandy fell immediately from the rank of *dialects* (that is to say, of *literary* languages both written and spoken) to the humble position of *patois* (we mean of idioms not written, but only spoken). This date (the fourteenth century), when the provincial dialects became *patois*, whilst the dialect of Ile-de-France assumed the place of the common language of the kingdom, marked the death of the *Langue d'oïl* and the historical birth of the *French language*.

The *patois*, which we find at the present day in the rural districts of Picardy, Normandy, and Burgundy, are not therefore, as is commonly believed, the *literary French corrupted on the lips of the peasants*; they are the *débris* of the old provincial dialects reduced by political events from the rank of written languages to that of *patois*.

The *Langue d'oïl* had disappeared to make room for the French, south of the Loire, the *Langue d'oc* likewise vanished away. The terrible rivalry between the inhabitants of the south and those of the north was ended by the Crusade against the Albigenses, and the defeat of the Southerners struck the death-blow at the *Langue d'oc*. In 1272, Languedoc was annexed to France, and the introduction of the French language speedily followed as a matter of course. The *Langue d'oc* ceased to be used as a medium for writing; it fell from the rank of a literary language to that of a *patois*, and the *Limousin*, *Gascon*, *Languedocian*, and *Provençal* *patois*, which still persist at the present day in the rural districts of southern France, are merely the *débris* of that *Langue d'oc* which shone with so brilliant a lustre in the times of the troubadours.

To sum up: we see that French is by no means formed from the corrupted *débris* of the Celtic language, as some grammarians still persist in saying; and its history may be concisely stated thus: the *popular* Latin, transferred into Gaul by the soldiers of Cæsar, quickly suppressed the native language, the *Celtic*, and, through a series of slow and imperceptible transformations, gave

birth to a new idiom, the **Romance language**, to which the barbarians added a certain number of German words (such as *fief*, *fief*, *sénéchal*, seneschal, *baron*, baron, *échevin*, alderman, sheriff, etc.) relating to the feudal system, to war, and hunting. Towards the eighth century, this *Romance language* was divided into two branches: the *Langue d'oc*, south of the Loire, and the *Langue d'oïl*, north of that river. One of the four dialects of the *Langue d'oïl*, that of Ile-de-France, gradually supplanted all the others, and became, in the fourteenth century, the *French language*.

To the old stock of the language, which may be called **popular French**, two categories of new words have become superadded, from the fourteenth century to the nineteenth.

1st. **Foreign words**, imported as the result of several political circumstances, the principal of which are, in the thirteenth century, the Crusades and the commercial relations with the East; in the sixteenth, the Italian wars, and the influence of the Renaissance; in the seventeenth, the influence exercised by Spain over the court of Louis XIII., and the wars of Germany with France; finally, in the present century, the commercial, industrial, and social relations which the French are carrying on with England, and which are daily increasing.

To the first of these causes is due the introduction of a small quantity of Arabic or Oriental words (*sultan*, sultan, *caravane*, caravan, *derviche*, dervish, *alcool*, alcohol, *sequin*, sequin, etc.); to the second, the French language is indebted for more than five hundred words of Italian origin (especially terms of war and of the fine arts—*spadassin*, fighter or hired assassin, *brave*, brave, *gabion*, gabion, *parapet*, parapet;—*costume*, dress, *fresque*, fresco, *aquarelle*, water-colour, *galbe*, entasis, *torse*, torso, etc.); the third has contributed a few Spanish words (*mantille*, mantilla, *duéyne*, duenna, *matamore*, bully, *hâbler*, to boast, etc.), and a certain number of special German military expressions (*vaguemestre*, baggage-master, *schlague*, military flogging, *bivouac*, bivouac, *blockhaus*, block-house, etc.); finally, the invasion of English words is still going on very steadily (*whist*, *turf*, *spleen*, *tunnel*, *wagon*, *rail*, *oake*, *express*, *fashionable*, *budget*, *jury*, etc.). *

2nd. In addition to the **popular French**, which is the work of the people, and to the **foreign words** imported into France as the result of political circumstances, we must distinguish a third series of expressions created by learned men since the eleventh century, and ever on the increase. This **learned French** con-

* For the etymology of all these words, see Brachet's "*Dictionnaire étymologique*."

sists of words borrowed directly by the *savants*, either from the Greek (*autopsie, aristocratie, microscope, cosmographie*), or from the Latin (as *relation, proportion, préméditation, précession, coordination*, etc.).

As a conclusion to these short historical remarks, let us show by a few numbers in what proportions the three elements—**popular** French, words of **foreign origin**, and **learned** or **artificial** words—have combined to form the French language. We shall take as the basis of our calculation the *Dictionnaire de l'Académie française*, which contains about 27,000 words: out of these we find 600 whose origin is entirely unknown; 1000 are words of foreign extraction, borrowed from the modern languages (English, Italian, Spanish, etc.); whilst 14,000 are of *learned origin*, having been made up by scholars with the help of Greek and Latin. We thus obtain a total of 15,600 words, leaving us rather less than 12,000 constituting what we may designate as *popular French*. Of these 12,000 words, about 8000, such as *pauvre-ette* (= poor creature), *faiblir* (= to grow weak), *maigrir* (= to get lean, or thin), are immediately created by the French with the help of the simple words *pauvre* (= poor), *faible* (= weak), *maigre* (= lean), etc. The simple words, which constitute the real substratum of the language, are therefore reducible to about 4200, of which 3800 are of Latin origin, whilst the remaining 400 are German words introduced by the Teutonic conquerors at the time of the invasion (fifth century).

OBJECT AND DEFINITION OF GRAMMAR.

We express ourselves by means of **phrases**, which are composed of **words**; words, in their turn, are composed of **letters**.

The French grammar is the series of rules to be observed in the French language for the assemblage of *letters* into words, and the combination of words into *sentences*. Hence three divisions in the grammar: the study of **letters**, the study of **words**, and the study of **sentences**.

BOOK I.

STUDY OF LETTERS.

CHAPTER I.

OF THE FRENCH ALPHABET.

1. We express our thoughts by means of *words*, which are composed of one or several *sounds*, represented in writing by signs called *letters*.

2. The collection of all the letters used in a language is called its *Alphabet*.

The French alphabet is composed of twenty-six letters, as follows:—*

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q,
R, S, T, U, V, W,† X, Y, Z.

These twenty-six letters do not express all the sounds of the French language; there are some other simple sounds which are expressed by joining together two letters of the alphabet, thus forming a new group. *Ch*, for instance, is a simple sound represented by two letters.

Why does the French alphabet follow this curious order in which consonants and vowels are jumbled together indiscriminately? Because it is derived from the Latin, whose alphabet was already arranged in this order. The Latins borrowed their alphabet from the Greeks, and the Greeks took theirs from the Phœnicians.

3. All the sounds of the French language are divided into two classes, viz. **vowels** and **consonants**.

* We do not attempt any equivalent pronunciation of the French Alphabet; the pupil must learn from the master how the letters are pronounced.

† W is used in words taken from English and German, and in their French derivatives.

SECTION I.

OF THE VOWELS.

4. The sound produced by a simple emission of the voice (*a, o, u*), is called a *vowel*. There are seven vowels in French—

a, e, i (or y), o, u, eu, ou.

All the vowels can be pronounced by themselves without the help of any other sound.

5. All the vowels can be either **short or long**, according as they are pronounced **quickly or slowly**: thus *a* is short in *patte* (=paw, foot), because it is pronounced rapidly; whilst it is long in *pâte* (=dough), because we lay a stress on the *d*. In the same way—

<i>e</i>	is long in	<i>bête</i> (=beast),	and short in	<i>jette</i> (=he or she throws).
<i>i</i>	"	<i>gîte</i> (=lodging),	"	<i>petite</i> (=small).
<i>o</i>	"	<i>côte</i> (=coast),	"	<i>dévoté</i> (=devout).
<i>u</i>	"	<i>flûte</i> (=flute),	"	<i>butte</i> (=batt, mound).
<i>eu</i>	"	<i>heure</i> (=hour),	"	<i>jeune</i> (=young).
<i>eu</i>	"	<i>jeûne</i> (=fast),	"	<i>creuser</i> (=to dig).
<i>ou</i>	"	<i>voute</i> (=vault),	"	<i>toute</i> (=all).

Out of the seven vowels *a, e, i, o, u, eu, ou*, the first five are represented in French by a single letter; the last two are expressed by the junction of two letters, namely *e* and *u*, *o* and *u*. Although appearing to the eye compound vowels, they give to the ear only one sound, *eu, ou*, as simple as that of *a* or *o*.

6. No remarks are needed about *a* and *i*; but *e, o, and eu* require some observations to be made—

The letter *e* is used in French to express **three sounds**, which in reality ought to be considered as three distinct vowels:—

1. A very *dull* sound, called **e muet** (mute), as in *homme* (=man), *venir*, (=to come).

2. An *acute* sound, called **e fermé** (close), as in *aimé* (=loved), *bonté* (=goodness). This *e* is generally denoted by the sign (*'*), called **acute accent** (*accent aigu*).

The *e* is likewise close in words ending by the letter *r* when the *r* is not pronounced. Thus *verger* (=an orchard), *rocher* (=a rock), *aimer* (=to love).

8. A very open sound, which is heard in *terre* (= earth, land), *mer* (= sea), *enfer* (= hell), *succès* (= success), *procès* (= lawsuit), and uttered by opening the mouth wide. This *e* is called **ouvert** (open), and is generally marked by the little sign (*'*), called **grave accent** (*accent grave*). No accent is used when the open *e* is followed by two consonants, as in *peste* (= plague), *reste* (= remainder), *fresque* (= fresco), or when it is followed by a sounded *r* at the end of a word, as in :—

<i>amer</i> (= bitter)	<i>fer</i> (= iron)
<i>cancer</i> (= cancer)	<i>hier</i> (= yesterday)
<i>cher</i> (= dear)	<i>hiver</i> (= winter)
<i>enfer</i> (= hell)	<i>ver</i> (= worm).

This sound of the open *e* is also rendered either by *ai*, as in :—

<i>aïre</i> (= threshing floor), pronounced <i>ère</i> .	
<i>chair</i> (= flesh),	" <i>chère</i> .
<i>clair</i> (= clear),	" <i>clère</i> .
<i>éclair</i> (= lightning),	" <i>éclère</i> .
<i>pair</i> (= equal),	" <i>père</i> .

Or by *ei*, as in :—

<i>peine</i> (= trouble), pronounced <i>pène</i> .	
<i>Seine</i> (= Seine),	" <i>scène</i> .
<i>veine</i> (= vein),	" <i>vène</i> .

7. The sound *eu* is represented in French in three different ways, viz. :—

<i>eu</i> , as in <i>heure</i> (= hour),	
<i>œu</i> , " <i>bœuf</i> (= ox), <i>œuf</i> (= egg), <i>sœur</i> (= sister).	
<i>œ</i> and <i>ue</i> , " <i>œil</i> (= eye), <i>accueil</i> (= greet [thou]), <i>cueille</i> (= pluck [thou]), <i>orgueil</i> (= pride),	

which are pronounced as if written :—

accueille, cueille, orgueil.

8. The vowel *y* between two consonants is pronounced *i*, as in *analyse* (= analysis, parsing), *martyr* (= martyr), *presbytère* (= parsonage); but between two vowels it is sounded like two *i*'s, that is to say, that the first *i* is joined to the preceding vowel, as in *aboyer* (= to bark), pronounce *aboi-ier*, and not *aboi-er*; and in *pays* (= country), pronounce *pai-is*, and not *pa-is*.

9. A diphthong is the combination of two simple vowels pronounced by a single emission of the voice, as *ui* in *huileux* (=oily). *Ui*, being a compound of the two vowels *u* and *i*, is a diphthong.

Diphthong comes from the Latin *diphthongus* which, itself, was borrowed from the Greek, and means *two sounds*.

10. In French, diphthongs are formed with the four vowels *i*, *o*, *u*, *ou*, followed by some other vowel of the alphabet.

Thus *i* forms: **ia**, as in *piano* (=piano)

ie, " *piéd* (=foot)

io, " *piocher* (=to dig);

o forms: **oa**, as in *moabite* (=moabite)

oe, " *moelle* (=marrow)

oi, " *roi* (=king);

u forms: **ue**, as in *écuelle* (=bowl)

ui, " *huile* (=oil)

" " *suil* (=tallow);

ou forms: **oua**, as in *douanier* (=custom-house officer)

oue, " *fouetter* (=to whip)

oui, " *oui* (=eyes)

" " *louis* (=louis)

Exercise 1.

Write out the following words in French and in English.

A. Underlining with one dash the **short**, and with two dashes the **long vowels** [see § 5]:—

pâté	petite	eru	fleur	paix
thé	chute	crâ	malheur	file
âge	fête	du	pêcheur	jeune
sage	épître	dû	pêcheur	jeune
cravate	sucro	mot	mur	tache
fourchette	apôtre	aût	mûr	tâche
tôte	châsse	louve	sur	bûche
roule	chasse	succès	sûr	fou
route				

B. Underlining the **e** mute (a); the **e** close (b); and the open **e** or its equivalents (c) [see § 6]:—

(a) pureté	tenir	somme	élever	sentence
mener	bijouterie	Rome	batelier	féroce
(b) aimé	méchanceté	beauté	sobriété	présent
dîner	légèreté	boucheur	boulangier	péril
(c) excès	élève	hiver	pair	haine
arrêt	presque	chaîne	chair	reine

Q. Underlining the eu or its equivalents [see § 7] :—

beurre	fauteuil	deuil	neud	œuf
œuf	œuf	œuf	œuf	œuf
chœur	orgueil	œuf	demeure	œuvre

D. Arranging under two heads those where the y stands for i, and those where the y stands for ii [see § 8] :—

croyant	foudroyant	finyard	cyprès	presbytère
bruyant	rayon	syllabe	style	martyr
payé	citoyen	symbole	analyse	acolyte

E. Underlining the diphthongs [see §§ 9 and 10] :—

diable	huile	médiocre	étoile	écuelle
acier	tuile	ennui	poire	queue
cabier	guide	cuir	roue	équestre
l'épave	liquide	louage	Louis	quille

SECTION II.

OF THE CONSONANTS.

11. In the French alphabet there are twenty consonants :—

B, C, D, F, G, H, J, K, L, M, N, P, Q, R, S,
T, V, W, X, Z,

to which CH should be added.

Several of these consonants express the same sound, thus *s, k, q* have the sound of *c hard*, e.g., cavalier (=horseman), kakatoë (=cockatoo), qualifier (=to qualify).

S and *c* are sounded alike in servir (=to serve), and cervelle (=brains);

J and *g* in j'ai (=I have), and geai (=jay), joli (=pretty), and geôlier (=jailer);

Z and *s* in zéro (=zero, nought), and déserteur (=deserter), which is pronounced déserteur.

These letters are called CONSONANTS, from the Latin word *consona* (that which is pronounced with, by the help of), because the old grammarians believed that a consonant could never be pronounced without the help of a vowel.

12. The consonants are produced by three different parts of the vocal mechanism: the throat, the teeth, and the lips. The six consonants, *c, k, q, g, j, ch*, which are produced by the throat, are for that reason, called

gutturals (from the Latin *guttur*, throat); two of them, **o** and **g**, have a double sound, viz., *hard* before the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, as in *camarade* (=comrade), *gamin* (=street Arab), *corridor* (=passage), *gobelet* (=goblet); *cumuler* (=to accumulate), *guttural* (=guttural); and *soft* before the vowels *e* and *i*, as in *cerveau* (=brains), *germer* (=to sprout); *cirer* (=to black, to polish), *gibier* (=game).

13. T, d, s, z, which are produced by the *teeth*, are, for that reason, called **dentals** (from Lat. *dens*, *dentis*, tooth).

s placed between two vowels is sounded like **z**:—
cloison (=partition) pronounce *cloison*
poison (=poison) " *poison*.

14. The consonants produced by the help of the *lips*, and for that reason called **labials** (from the Latin *labia*, lips), are **p, b, f, v**.

15. The two consonants **l** and **r** are called **liquids** (from the Latin *liquidus*, liquid, flowing), because these two letters are easily joined to other consonants, such as *p, b, c*, to form groups of letters quite liquid (*easy to pronounce*), such as *bl* in *blanc* (=white), *pl* in *plaine* (=field), *cl* in *clameur* (=clamour, outcry), *gl* in *gloire* (=glory), or *pr* in *premier* (=first), *cr* in *croire* (=to believe), *br* in *bruit* (=noise), *gr* in *grandir* (=to grow).

16. The two consonants **m** and **n** are called **nasal** (from the Latin *nasus*, nose), because they give to the vowels a peculiar sound proceeding from the *nose*, as *an* in *manger* (=to eat), *vanter* (=to praise).

The liquid *l* and the nasal *n* become liquid in some cases, that is to say, they are pronounced as if followed by a very weak *i*, audible, for instance, in *campagnard* (=countryman), and *travailler* (=to work).

17. x is a double consonant, pronounced sometimes like *cs* (*luxueux*=luxurious), sometimes like *gs* (*exact*=exact).

10. H is the weakest of all the consonants, just as *e* silent or *mute* is the weakest vowel. There are two kinds of *h*'s:—

1. *H* silent (or *mute*), which does not represent any sound, and over which leaps the elision of the article *le* or *la*, exactly as if the article was coming into contact with the vowel itself. Examples:—

L'homme (=the man), *l'habitude* (=the habit);

Exactly as in—

L'abaissement (=the abasement), *l'obéissance* (=the obedience).

2. *H* aspirate, which in French is not more heard than *h* silent, but which differs from it by preventing the elision:—

Le héros (=the hero), *la houlette* (=the shepherd's crook).

Care must be taken not to sound *les-zhéros*, *les-zhoulettes*.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. How are <i>words</i> formed? | 10. What is to be noticed with reference to the letter <i>y</i> ? |
| 2. How are <i>sounds</i> represented? | 11. What is a <i>diphthong</i> ? |
| 3. What is the <i>alphabet</i> ? | 12. Name the principal diphthongs. |
| 4. How many letters are there in the French alphabet? | 13. How many <i>consonants</i> are there in French? |
| 5. What is the origin of the French alphabet? | 14. Name the <i>gutturals</i> —the <i>dentals</i> —the <i>labials</i> —the <i>liquids</i> —the <i>nasals</i> . |
| 6. What are <i>vowels</i> ? | 15. When do the consonants <i>l</i> and <i>n</i> become liquid? |
| 7. Give a list of the French vowels. | 16. When is <i>h</i> a mute letter?—When does it become aspirate? |
| 8. What is a short vowel?—a long vowel? | |
| 9. What is the <i>e</i> mute?—the <i>e</i> close?—the <i>e</i> open? | |

Exercise 2.

Write out the following words in French and in English.

A. Underlining the **guttural consonant** (see § 12):—

cristal	jumeau	kilomètre	question	goût
camp	joyeux	requête	chaleur	dégât

B. Underlining with one dash the **c** and **g** hard, and with two dashes the **c** and **g** soft:—

cascade	garçon	courte	céleste	golfe
cervelas	géant	gibier	cible	guêtre

C. Underlining the **dentals** (a); the **labials** (b); and the **liquids** (c) [see §§ 13—15]:—

(a)	teindre	attentif	dimanche	seigneur	zéro
	tempête	danseur	savoir	sucré	zone
(b)	poulet	bonole	figure	perte	revers
	peuple	faiblesse	verbe	vertu	bible
(c)	blé	grand	bruit	plateau	plume
	croisée	blanc	prairie	trouble	prune

D. Underlining the **nasal** (a), and the **liquid l** and **n** (b) [see § 16]:—

(a)	menton	mensonge	un	fonction	festin
	tenture	loçon	puissance	prompt	vilain
(b)	mouille	campagne	pille	vermeil	gouvernail
	oreille	règne	aiguille	sommeil	Gascogne

E. Underlining with one dash the **x** employed instead of **cs**, and with two dashes the **x** employed instead of **gz** (see § 17):—

luxé	texte	exhaler	exprès	exposer
exemple	exigu	vexer	annexion	exigeant

F. Underlining with one dash the **h** mute, and with two dashes the **h** aspirate (see § 18):—

habile	hagard	hache	hasard	héritier
haie	habit	habitation	herbage	hibou

CHAPTER II.

OF SYLLABLES.—ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS.

19. A **syllable** is one or several sounds which are pronounced without interruption, and by a single emission of the voice. Thus *ôté* (=taken away, past participle of *ôter*), is formed of two syllables, the first of which is composed of only one vowel (*ô*), and the second of a consonant (*t*) and a vowel (*é*).

When a syllable ends with an *e* silent (or mute), as *me*, in *j'aime* (=I love), it is called **silent** (or **mute**).

20. The name of **orthographic signs** is given to certain signs used in writing, either to indicate the changes of the same vowel, as *o* and *ô*, *é* and *è*, *ai* and *ei*; or the suppression of a letter, as in *l'épée* for *la épée* (=the sword); or lastly, the joining of two or three words into one, as *arc-en-ciel* (=rainbow), *pied-à-terre* (=temporary lodging, resting-place).

There are five kinds of *orthographic signs*, viz., the *accents*, the *cedilla*, the *dieresis*, the *apostrophe*, and the *hyphen*.

The **accents** are three in number: the *acute* ('), the *grave* (`), and the *circumflex* (^).

The *acute* accent is placed over *close é*: *bonté* (=kindness), *santé* (=health).

The *grave* accent is placed over *open è*: *procès* (=lawsuit), *succès* (=success). It is also placed over *à* (=to), *là* (=there), *où* (=where), *dès* (=as soon as), to prevent the confusion with *a* (= [he or she] has), *la* (=the, *fem. article*, or *her*, *pers. pronoun*), *ou* (=or), *des* (=of the, *defin. art.*, or *some*, *indefin. art.*).

The *circumflex* accent is placed over long vowels: *côte* (=coast, shore, rib), *gîte* (=dwelling).

The *circumflex* accent usually shows that a letter has been suppressed. Thus, the words *tête* (=head), *fête* (=festival), *bête* (=beast), were originally spelt *teste*, *feste*, *beste*, and they preserved that spelling till the middle of the eighteenth century. It was only in 1740 that the *Académie Française* replaced the consonant *s* by a *circumflex* accent in the above words and similar ones.

21. In order to show, when two vowels following each other are to be pronounced separately, the sign (¨) called **tréma** (dieresis) is placed over the second: thus *uë* in *ciguë* (=hemlock). Without the dieresis this word would be pronounced *cig*, because *ue* would be mute as in *figue* (=fig), *ligue* (=league).

The **apostrophe** (') denotes the suppression of the vowels *a*, *e*, *i*, in *le*, *la*, *je*, *me*, *te*, *se*, *de*, *que*, *si*, and a few

other words before another word beginning with a vowel or *h* silent, as in:—

<i>L'épée</i> (=the sword)	instead of <i>la-épée</i>
<i>J'arrive</i> (=I arrive)	" <i>je-arrive</i>
<i>S'il vient</i> (=if he comes)	" <i>si-il vient</i>
<i>L'honneur</i> (=the honour)	" <i>le-honneur</i>

22. The **cedilla** is a sign (,) placed under the *c* before *a*, *o*, *u*, when it has a soft sound, as in *façade* (=frontage, façade), *façon* (=form, shape), *rinçure* (=rinsings), instead of its regular hard sound before the same vowels, as in *camarade* (=comrade), *colombe* (=dove), *curieux* (=inquisitive).

23. The **hyphen**, called in French **trait d'union**, joins together either the different parts of a compound word, as *arc-en-ciel* (=rainbow), *chef-lieu* (=chief or county town), *vis-à-vis* (=opposite);—or the verb with its subject (in the interrogative conjugation), as in *irai-je* (=shall I go)? *viendrez-vous* (=will you come)?—or with its object, as in *croyez-moi* (=believe me), *venez-y-voir* (=come hither and see).

All these signs were introduced into the French language by the grammarians of the sixteenth century. The accents are borrowed from the Greek language, in which, however, they were used for a very different purpose. *Trema* is a Greek word which means "point, dot," or, more properly, "hole." *Apostrophe*, likewise borrowed from the Greek, means "that which wards off," the suppression of the vowel preventing, or *warding off*, the hiatus which would be caused by the discordant meeting of two vowels. The *cedilla* was borrowed from the Italian printers, who called *sediglia* a little crotchet like a *s* placed under *c*, when it was to be pronounced *s* instead of *k*. The Italian word comes from *seta* (*s*), and means properly "small *s*."

24. The three accents just described must not be mistaken for the *tonic accent* (from the L. *tonus*, a tone).

The raising of the voice on a particular syllable in every word is called the **tonic accent**, and the syllable on which falls that accent is called the **accented** or **tonic syllable**.

In French the accented syllable is always the last of the word, as *mouton* (=sheep), *cheval* (=horse), *il*

aima (=he loved), except when the word ends in *e* **mute**, as **table** (=table), **aimable** (=amiable), **lisible** (=legible), in which case the tonic accent is carried back to the penultimate: **table**, **aimable**, **lisible**.

It results from this that, when two mute syllables would otherwise come together at the end of a word, as in the feminine of adjectives, and in verbs (**muet-e** = dumb; **complet-e** = complete; **appeler** = to call, **j'appelle** = I call; **acheter** = to buy, **j'achète** = I buy; **mener** = to lead, **je mène** = I lead), the sound of the *e* in the last syllable but one is increased either by putting a grave accent over it (**complète**, **je mène**, **j'achète**), or by doubling the following consonant (**j'appelle**, **muet-te**).

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. What is a *syllable*? — How many syllables are there in *résidence*?
2. What is a *mute syllable*?
3. What is meant by *orthographic signs*?
4. Enumerate the orthographic signs used in French.
5. Where is the *acute accent* placed? — What are the various uses of the *grave accent*? — What does the *circumflex accent* generally show?
6. Where is the *tréma* placed?
7. Explain the use of the *apostrophe*, the *hyphen*, the *cedilla*.
8. State the origin of the various orthographic signs.
9. What do you mean by the *tonic accent*?
10. Which is the *accented syllable* in French words?

Exercise 3.

Write out the following words in French and in English:

A. Underlining the **tonic** syllable (see § 24):—

aimant	président	souvent	président (verbe)	veille
aiment	expédient	trouvent	expédient (verbe)	veillent

B. Underlining with one dash the **tonic** syllable, and with two dashes the **atonic** one (see § 24):—

édifice	toniffe	froment	plancher	soulèvement
forêt	avoue	charrue	assiette	fondement

BOOK II.

STUDY OF WORDS.

25. There are ten classes of words used in the French language, viz.:

- | | |
|----------------------------------|---|
| 1. Le nom (noun) | 6. Le participe (participle) |
| 2. L'article (article) | 7. La préposition (preposition) |
| 3. L'adjectif (adjective) | 8. L'adverbe (adverb) |
| 4. Le pronom (pronoun) | 9. La conjonction (conjunction) |
| 5. Le verbe (verb) | 10. L'interjection (interjection). |

These ten kinds of different words, which by their combination form the French language, may be compared to the different parts of the human body, and for that reason have been called by grammarians **parts of speech**—that is to say, *the parts of the language*.

All these parts of speech (with the exception of the article unknown to the Romans) passed from Latin into French.

CHAPTER I.

OF THE NOUN OR SUBSTANTIVE.

26. The **noun** or **substantive** is a word used to name persons, animals, or things.

There are two kinds of nouns: **proper** nouns and **common** nouns.

The **proper** noun applies either to one *person* only, as *Pierre* (= Peter), *Paul* (= Paul), *Louis* (= Louis), or to one *thing* only, as *le Rhône* (= river Rhone), *la Loire* (= river Loire).

REMARK.—Proper nouns begin always with a capital letter.

The **common** noun designates either all the persons of the same nature, as *enfant* (=child), *marchand* (=merchant), *soldat* (=soldier); or things of the same kind, as *cour* (=court, yard), *jardin* (=garden), *maison* (=house).

27. Collective nouns are those which express a collection of persons or things, as *foule* (=crowd), *troupe* (=troop), *multitude* (=multitude).

Compound nouns are those which, although formed of two or three words, designate one single person or thing, as *chou-fleur* (=cauliflower), *arc-en-ciel* (=rainbow).

28. In nouns two things are to be studied and examined—*gender* and *number*.

SECTION I.

OF GENDER IN NOUNS.

29. Gender is the difference or distinction which is made between male and female beings.

In French there are two genders:—the **masculine**, and the **feminine**.

Men and males of animals, as *le père* (=the father), *le lion* (=the lion), are of the masculine gender. Women and females of animals, as *la mère* (=the mother), *la lionne* (=the lioness), are of the feminine gender.

Moreover, names of things which belong to neither sex have been made, by imitation, masculine or feminine. Thus *le bois* (=the wood), *le château* (=the castle), *le pays* (=the country), are masculine; whilst *la cour* (=the court, yard), *la grille* (=the grate, railing), *la lune* (=the moon) are feminine.

30. Feminine nouns are generally formed by adding an **e mute** to the masculine—

marquis (=marquis)
ours (=bear)

marquise (=marchioness)
ourse (=she-bear)

When the masculine noun ends with **en** or **on**, the **n** is doubled in the feminine—

baron (=baron)
chrétien (=Christian)
lion (=lion)

baronne (=baroness)
chrétienne (=Christian)
lionne (=lioness)

When the masculine ends in **er**, the feminine takes a grave accent (') over the **e**: *portier* (=door-keeper), *portière*.

EXCEPTIONS.—About twenty substantives form their feminine by changing **e** final into **esse**, as—*négre* (=negro), *négresse* (=negress); *tigre* (=tiger), *tigresse* (=tigress); *prophète* (=prophet), *prophétesse* (=prophetess); *hôte* (=host), *hôtesse* (=hostess), etc. *Chasseur* (=hunter), *pêcheur* (=sinner), weaken, besides, the diphthong *eu* into *e* mute, thus making *chasseresse*, *pêcheresse* (and not *chasseurasse*, *pêcheurasse*).

A few masculine substantives ending in **eur** form their feminine in **ice**, such as *acteur* (=actor), *ambassadeur* (=ambassador), etc., which make *actrice*, *ambassadrice*, etc. *Chanteur* (=singer), *voyageur* (=traveller), etc., have for their corresponding feminine: *chanteuse*, *voyageuse*, etc.

Many nouns, denoting professions generally followed by men, have no feminine: *imprimeur* (=printer), *graveur* (=engraver).

Exercise 4.

Write out the feminine of the following substantives, and give the meaning of each:—

- | | | | | |
|---------------------|--------------------|--------------------|-------------------|--------------------|
| (a) <i>marquis</i> | <i>ouvrier</i> | <i>chien</i> | <i>gardien</i> | <i>Louis</i> |
| <i>cousin</i> | <i>lion</i> | <i>comédien</i> | <i>mercier</i> | <i>écolier</i> |
| <i>orphelin</i> | <i>paysan</i> | <i>magicien</i> | <i>portier</i> | <i>ours</i> |
| <i>châtelain</i> | <i>Européen</i> | <i>jardinier</i> | <i>Anglais</i> | <i>Italien</i> |
| <i>filleul</i> | <i>Français</i> | <i>Romain</i> | <i>berger</i> | <i>Gascon</i> |
| (b) <i>pair</i> | <i>chasseur</i> | <i>maître</i> | <i>Suisse</i> | <i>traître</i> |
| <i>prophète</i> | <i>tigre</i> | <i>défendeur</i> | <i>prince</i> | <i>comte</i> |
| <i>négre</i> | <i>chanoine</i> | <i>hôte</i> | <i>pêcheur</i> | <i>enchanteur</i> |
| (c) <i>baigneur</i> | <i>nageur</i> | <i>pêcheur</i> | <i>sauteur</i> | <i>chanteur</i> |
| <i>voyageur</i> | <i>joueur</i> | <i>travailleur</i> | <i>voleur</i> | <i>faucheur</i> |
| <i>acheteur</i> | <i>laveur</i> | <i>polisseur</i> | <i>flatteur</i> | <i>danseur</i> |
| (d) <i>délateur</i> | <i>bienfaiteur</i> | <i>fondateur</i> | <i>conducteur</i> | <i>directeur</i> |
| <i>acteur</i> | <i>moteur</i> | <i>admirateur</i> | <i>adorateur</i> | <i>instituteur</i> |

SECTION II.

OF NUMBER IN NOUNS.

31. The **number** is the difference or distinction which is made between one single thing and several things collected together.

In French, as in English, there are two numbers—the **singular**, to denote one person or one thing, as *le lion* (=the lion), *le livre* (=the book); and the **plural**, to denote several persons or things, as *les lions* (=the lions), *les livres* (=the books).

32. GENERAL RULE.—The plural of nouns is formed by adding **s** to the singular: *L'homme* (=man), *les hommes* (=men); *le livre* (=the book), *les livres* (=the books).

The reason why the French forms its plural in **s**, in preference to **m** or **v**, or any other letter, may be briefly stated thus: the French language has borrowed from the Latin accusative both its singular and its plural; and the letter **s** was generally the sign of the accusative plural in Latin.

33. When a noun in the singular already ends in **s**, **x**, or **z**, it does not change in the plural—

le fils (=the son)
la voix (=the voice)
le nez (=the nose)

les fils (=the sons)
les voix (=the voices)
les nez (=the noses).

34. EXCEPTIONS.—Nouns whose singular ends in **au** or **eu** take **x** in the plural—

un bateau (=a boat)
le château (=the castle)

des bateaux (=some boats)
les châteaux (=the castles);

as well as the seven following nouns ending in **ou**:

le bijou (=the jewel)
un caillou (=a pebble)
un chou (=a cabbage)
le genou (=the knee)
le hibou (=the owl)
un joujou (=a toy)
un pou (=a louse)

les bijoux (=the jewels)
des cailloux (=some pebbles)
des choux (=some cabbages)
les genoux (=the knees)
les hiboux (=the owls)
des joujoux (=some toys)
des poux (=lice).

N.B.—All the other nouns ending in **ou** follow the general rule, and take **s** in the plural—

un clou (=a nail)
un verrou (=a bolt)

des clous (=some nails)
des verrous (=some bolts).

This irregularity is one of the remains of the old language. The French **s** in the plural is always silent: roses, fleurs, and in the Middle Ages, we find it spelt either **s** or **x**, in *nes* for *nez*, *vois* or *voix* for *voix*, for instance.

That license has remained in the words *bijou*, *genou*, etc., which are still written *bijoux*, *genoux*, whilst the plural of *clou* and *verrou* is spelt *clous*, *verrous*.

35. Nouns in *al* change *al* into *aux* in the plural—

<i>le cheval</i> (=the horse)	<i>les chevaux</i> (=the horses)
<i>un mal</i> (=an evil)	<i>des maux</i> (=evils)
EXCEPT:— <i>bal</i> (=ball [to dance at])	<i>chacal</i> (=jackal)
<i>carnaval</i> (=carnival)	<i>régal</i> (=regale, feast, treat)
which take <i>s</i> in the plural:— <i>des bals</i> (=balls)	

Seven substantives ending in *ail* follow the same rule—

<i>un bail</i> (=a lease)	<i>des baux</i> (=leases)
<i>le corail</i> (=coral)	<i>les coraux</i> (=the corals)
<i>l'émail</i> (=the enamel)	<i>les émaux</i> (=the enamels)
<i>un soupirail</i> (=an air-hole)	<i>des soupiraux</i> (=air-holes)
<i>le travail</i> (=work)	<i>les travaux</i> (=the works)
<i>le vantail</i> (=the leaf of a door)	<i>les vantaux</i> (=the leaves of doors)
<i>un vitrail</i> (=a stained glass window)	<i>des vitraux</i> (=stained glass windows).

N.B.—The word *bestiaux* is used as the plural of *bétail* (=cattle)

But all the other substantives ending in *ail* follow the general rule, as—

<i>un gouvernail</i> (=a helm)	<i>des gouvernails</i> (=helms), etc.
--------------------------------	---------------------------------------

At the birth of the French language—that is, in the time of Hugh Capet—*al* became *als* in the plural: *un cheval*, *des chevaux*, *un mal*, *des maux*; but in the thirteenth century (about the time of St. Louis) *al* was softened, and became *au* before a consonant. Traces of this alteration are found in the expressions: *cheval-léger* (=a light dragoon), and *Vaugirard*, still used instead of *cheval-léger*, *Val Girard* (le vallon de Girard=the vale of Girard): *chevals* then became *chevaux*, and, subsequently, *chevaux*. (See § 34.)

36. The following nouns have two plural forms, one regular, the other irregular. The irregular generally leaves to the noun the same meaning it has in the singular, whilst the regular gives it a peculiar signification:—

IRREGULAR.

<i>l'aïeul</i> * (=the grandfather)	<i>les aïeux</i> (=the ancestors)
<i>le ciel</i> (=sky, heaven)	<i>les cieux</i> (=the heavens)
<i>l'œil</i> (=the eye)	<i>les yeux</i> (=the eyes)
<i>le travail</i> (=the work)	<i>les travaux</i> (=the works).

REGULAR.

<i>les aïeuls</i> (=the grandfathers)
<i>les ciels</i> (=skies in pictures, bed-testers)
<i>les œils</i> , in compound nouns, as <i>œils-de-bœuf</i> (=oval windows)
<i>des travaux</i> (=a minister's reports, o. brakes for shoeing vicious horses).

* *Aïeul* keeps its original meaning in the regular plural.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. How many kinds of words are there in French?
2. What is the meaning of the expression: *parts of speech*?
3. What is a common substantive?—a proper one?
4. What is a collective noun?—a compound one?
5. What are the two points to be studied in connection with nouns?
6. What is meant by the *gender* of a noun?—How many genders are there in French?
7. What is the general rule for the formation of the feminine in French nouns?
8. Give the feminine of the following nouns: *chien—traître—lecteur—chanteur—pêcheur*.
9. What is meant by the *number* of a noun?—How many numbers are there in French?
10. How do you form the plural of French nouns?
11. How do you account for *s* being the sign of the plural in French?
12. How do you form the plural of nouns ending, 1. in *s, x, z*; 2. in *u* or *eu*; 3. in *ou*?
13. How do you explain the irregularity in the case of nouns ending in *ou*?
14. How do you form the plural of nouns ending, 1. in *al*; 2. in *ail*?—What are the exceptions?
15. What is the origin of the plural in *aux*?
16. Give the plural of *âneul, étel, ail*.

Exercise 5.

Write out the plural of the following substantives, giving the meaning of each:—

- | | | | | | |
|-----|----------|---------|------------|----------|------------|
| (a) | vaisseau | homme | maître | excès | château |
| | richesse | mer | siècle | bambou | hampeau |
| | pois | trou | élève | tableau | caillou |
| | vice | ami | navigateur | vertu | acajou |
| | verrou | oiseau | perdrix | noix | |
| (b) | maréchal | canal | régat | camail | gouvernail |
| | cheval | arsenal | bal | détail | rail |
| | bocal | cristal | carnaval | éventail | vitrail |
| | signal | végétal | chaucal | bail | travail |
| | amiral | vassal | soupirail | corail | général |
| | mal | journal | attirail | émail | capital |

SECTION III.

FORMATION OF SUBSTANTIVES.

37. New substantives are formed by joining together, either:

1. **two nouns**: un *chat-tigre* (=a tiger-cat),
2. **a noun and an adjective**: une *basse-taille* (=a bass voice),
3. **a noun and a verb**: un *tire-bouchon* (=a cork-screw),
4. **a noun and a preposition**: un *sous-officier* (=a non-commissioned officer),
5. **a verb and an adverb**: un *pas-se-partout* (=a master-key),
6. **two nouns joined by a preposition**: un *arc-en-ciel* (=a rainbow).

38. From a simple substantive, as *boutique* (=shop), two new words can be derived in French :

(a) A **derivative**, with a new termination called **suffix** (from the Latin *suffixus*=*affixed to or after*) placed *after* the word, as *ier* in *boutiquier* (=shopkeeper). The part of the simple word which remains unaltered, and to which the suffix is added, is termed **root** or **stem**.

(b) A **compound**, with the help of a new word called **prefix** (from the Latin *præfixus*=*affixed before*), which is placed *before* the simple word, as *arrière-boutique* (=back-shop).

PREFIXES.

39. The prefixes used in French to form new substantives are—

après,	as in	une <i>après-midi</i> (=an afternoon)
avant,	"	un <i>avant-coureur</i> (=a forerunner, precursor)
arrière,	"	une <i>arrière-boutique</i> (=a back-shop)
contre,	"	un <i>contre-ordre</i> (=a counter-order)
entre,	"	une <i>entre-côte</i> (=a rib of beef)
non,	"	un <i>non-sens</i> (=a nonsense)
sans,	"	un <i>sans- façon</i> (an off-handed manner)
sous,	"	un <i>sous-officier</i> (=a non-commissioned officer)

The three particles, *bis*, *mi*, *vice*, are also used to form compound nouns—

bis	(=twice), as	<i>bisaïeul</i> (=gr ⁻⁴ grandfather); <i>biscuit</i> (=biscuit, lit. twice baked)
mi	(=half), as	la <i>mi-carême</i> (=mid-Lent); la <i>mi-juillet</i> (=the middle of July); <i>minuit</i> (=midnight)
vice	(=instead of, in the place of), as	<i>vice-roi</i> (=viceroy), <i>vice-amiral</i> (=vice-admiral).

SUFFIXES.

40. Derivative substantives are formed in French by adding to substantives already existing, to adjectives, or to verbs *eleven* suffixes: *ade*, *age*, *ain*, *ard*, *at*, *é*, *ée*, *er* (*ier*), *ie* (*orie*), *esse*, *isto*.

1. Substantives formed from substantives already existing.

From <i>colonne</i> (=a column), we get		<i>colonnade</i> , i.e. a collection of columns.
<i>plume</i> (=a feather)	"	<i>plumage</i> , i.e. a collection of feathers (=plumage).
<i>chapelle</i> (=a chapel)	"	<i>chapelain</i> (=a chaplain).
<i>bille</i> (=a ball)	"	<i>billard</i> (=a billiard table).
<i>marquis</i> (=a marquis)	"	<i>marquisat</i> (=a marquisate).
<i>comte</i> (=a count or earl)	"	<i>comté</i> (=a county or earldom).
<i>bouche</i> (=a mouth)	"	<i>bouchée</i> (=a mouthful).
<i>horloge</i> (=a clock)	"	<i>horloger</i> (=a clockmaker).
<i>pomme</i> (=an apple)	"	<i>pommier</i> , (=an apple-tree).
<i>boucher</i> (=a butcher)	"	<i>boucherie</i> (=a butcher's shop, butchery).
<i>âne</i> (=an ass)	"	<i>ânesse</i> (=a she-ass).
<i>journal</i> (=a journal or newspaper)	" }	<i>journaliste</i> (=a journalist).

41. There is a particular class of suffixes which indicating *diminution*, are used to form derivatives, whose meaning is less than that of the simple word. For this reason they are called *diminutive suffixes*. Such are, for instance, *illon* in *négrillon* = *petit nègre* (=little negro); *eau* in *chevreau* = *petite chèvre* (=kid).

Some of these suffixes, whilst lessening the signification of the simple word, give to it, at the same time, a meaning of depreciation and contempt, as *aille* in—

la ferr-aille (=old iron), from *fer* (=iron)

la valet-aille (=funkeys), „ *valet* (=valet, footman), &c. &c.

42. The diminutive suffixes are six in number—

1. *aille*: *valet* (=valet), *valetaille* (=funkeys);
2. *as*: *plâtre* (=plaster), *plâtras* (=rubbish of plaster); (*in the feminine, asse*); *paille* (=straw), *paillassé* (=straw-mattress).
3. *et*: *livre* (=book), *livret* (=small-book); (*in the feminine, ette*); *chanson* (=song), *chansonnette* (=little song, ditty), hence the compound *elette*: *goutte* (=drop), *goutelette* (=small drop).
4. *on*: *âne* (=ass), *ânon* (=foal of an ass); hence the compounds *illon* and *eron*: *carpe* (=carp), *carpillon* (=small carp); *mouche* (=fly); *moucheron* (=gnat).
5. *eau*: *prune* (=plum), *pruneau* (=small plum); (*in the feminine, elle*), *prunelle* (=sloe).

The suffix *eau* makes *elle* in the feminine, because the old French language had the masculine termination *et* instead of *eau*; thus, *chapel*, the old form of *chapeau* (=hat), subsists still in *chapelier* (=hatter).

6. *ot*: *île* (=island), *ilot* (=small island).

2. Substantives derived from Adjectives.

43. New substantives are formed by adding to adjectives the five following suffixes: **esse, ise, ie, té, ure**. All these nouns, thus derived from adjectives, are feminine—

<i>la faiblesse</i> (=weakness)	from <i>faible</i> (=weak)
<i>la sottise</i> (=foolishness)	„ <i>sotte</i> , f. of <i>sot</i> (=foolish)
<i>la maladie</i> (=illness)	„ <i>malade</i> (=ill)
<i>la pauvreté</i> (=poverty)	„ <i>pauvre</i> (=poor)
<i>la courbure</i> (=bending)	„ <i>courbe</i> (=curved).

3. Substantives derived from Verbs.

44. New substantives are formed from the verbs in three different ways, either—

(1) by using as substantives the **infinitive**, the **present participle**, and the **past participle**, as *le manger* (=eating), which is the infinitive of *manger* (=to eat); *le tranchant* (=the edge), from *tranchant* (=cutting), present participle of *trancher* (=to cut); *le reçu* (=the receipt), past participle of the verb *recevoir* (=to receive);

Or, (2) by striking off the termination *er* from verbs belonging to the first conjugation; thus, from *replier* (=to fold back) we get *repli* (=fold); from *débuter* (=to begin) we get *début* (=outset); from *appeler* (=to call), we get *appel* (=call, appeal);

Or (3) by adding to the root of the verb the suffixes **ade, age, ance, eur** (or **isseur**), **is**, **ment** (or **ement**), **oir**, **on**, **aison** (or **ison**), **ure**.

Thus from—

<i>promen-er</i> (=to walk)	comes <i>promenade</i> (=walk)
<i>lav-er</i> (=to wash)	„ <i>lavage</i> (=washing)
<i>surveill-er</i> (=superintending)	„ <i>surveillance</i> (=superintendence)
<i>chass-er</i> (=to hunt)	„ <i>chasseur</i> (=hunter)
<i>rég-ir</i> (=to rule)	„ <i>régisseur</i> (=steward, bailiff)
<i>hach-er</i> (=to chop, to mince)	„ <i>hachis</i> (=hash, minced meat)
<i>hurl-er</i> (=to howl)	„ <i>hurlement</i> (=howling)
<i>parl-er</i> (=to speak)	„ <i>parloir</i> (=parlour)
<i>jur-er</i> (=to swear)	„ <i>juron</i> (=oath)
<i>li-er</i> (=to connect)	„ <i>liaison</i> (=connection)
<i>guér-ir</i> (=to cure)	„ <i>guérison</i> (=curing, healing)
<i>bless-er</i> (=to wound)	„ <i>blessure</i> (=wound).

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. How are new substantives formed in French?
2. Define a *prefix*;—a *suffix*.
3. Form a few substantives with the prefixes *contre*, *sous*, *sur*.
4. What is the meaning of *mi*, *bis*, *vice*?
5. Form a few substantives with the suffixes *al*, *on*, *ille*, *as*, *er*, *iste*.
6. What is meant by a *diminutive suffix*?
7. Form substantives with the suffixes *on*, *eau*, *ot*, *us*.
8. How are new substantives formed from adjectives?
9. What parts of the verbs are sometimes used as substantives?
10. What suffixes are used to form fresh substantives from verbs?—
Give a list of substantives formed from the verbs *nettoyer*, *abréger*, *épancher*, *frémir*, *sentir*.

Exercise 6.

Write a list of the following substantives with the PREFIX indicated, and give the meaning of both the simple and the compound substantives.

- | | |
|---------------------------|--|
| (a) prefix après : | coup, midi, demain, dîner |
| (b) " arrière : | garde, saison, boutique, neveu, pensée |
| (c) " avant : | poste, coureur, garde, goût, propos |
| (d) " contre : | coup, sens, marque, amiral, maîtresse |
| (e) " entre : | côte, mets, sol, pont |
| (f) " non : | sens, valeur, payement |
| (g) " sans : | façon, gêne, dent |
| (h) " sous : | officier, préfet, maître, intendant, sol |
| (i) " vice : | roi, président, amiral |
| (j) " mi : | nuit, jambe, juillet, partie |
| (k) " bis : | aïeul, sac. |

Exercise 7.

Write a list of compound substantives, by adding to the following one of the SUFFIXES given below, and give the meaning of both the simple and the compound words.

- (a) suffix **ade** (fem.):

aube	limon	colonne	poivre	arc
peuple	face	galop	recul	bourg
balustre	rodomont	orange	bourre	côté

- (b) suffix **at** (masc.):

solde	consul	assassin	syndic
externe	interne	Auvergne	forme
tribun	cardinal	marquis	économiste

- (c) suffix **age** (masc.):

herbe	esclave	bande	jardin	feuille
bord	branche	brigand	corde	ermite
langue	magasin	échafaud	vagabond	ligne
pèlerin	grille	mari	moule	plume
jaune	ferme	coquille	homme	aigreur

(d) suffix **ain** (*fem. aine*):

<i>Masc.</i>	{ monde	république *	Rome	proche
	{ public	Afrique *	terre	Amérique *
	{ Toulouse	Maroc	quatre	diocèse
<i>Fem.</i>	{ Dix †	huit	quarante	cinquante
	{ soixante	cent	trente	vingt
	{ douze	quinze		

(e) suffix **ard** (*fem. arde*):

<i>Masc.:</i>	campagne	montagne	bille
<i>Fem.:</i>	poule	bombe	mout

(f) suffix **é**:

<i>Masc.:</i>	comte	doigt
<i>Fem.:</i>	parent	prévôt

(g) suffix **ée** (*fem.*):

assiette	soir	rang	matin	niche
écuelle	jatte	table	cuiller	plume
pâte	bouche	train		

(h) suffix **ier** [*or er after oh, g, or ill (masc.)*]:

cerise	amande	gomme	grenade	pomme
poire	châtaigne	groseille	rose	orange
pêche	ferme	douane	barbe	botte
plomb	guerre	bourse	vache	cloche
carrosse	tapis	cheval	école	cuisine
serrure	porte	horloge	couteau	salade
colombe	cendre	sucré	(O.F. <i>coutel</i>)	oreille
encre	huile	moutarde	sable	houille

(i) suffix **erie** [*or ie when the substantive already ends in er*] (*fem.*):

acier	berger	boulangier	horloger	pirate
boucher	argent	bois	corde	fruit
ébéniste	gendarme	lait	singe	marbre

(j) suffix **iste** (*masc. or fem.*):

dent	monarchie	copie	art	journal
mode	auberge	capital	chimie	fleur
morale	ébène	latin	paysage	machine

(k) suffix **diminutive aille** (*fem.*):

roo	pierre	fût	mur
-----	--------	-----	-----

(l) suffix **diminutive as** (*fem. asse*):

papier†	fil	terre	(these are <i>fem.</i>)
---------	-----	-------	--------------------------

* Que is changed into c. † The r is changed into s. ‡ See § 24, and § 35
Note on cur.

(m) *suffix et (fem. ette)*:

Masc.	{	croc *	couple	coussin	livre
	{	cabine	poule	jardin	vers
	{	sac *	feuille	coffre	boule
Fem.	{	broche	fourche	chèvre	poule
	{	bûche	langue	boule	table
	{	cache	mie	épaule	chaîne

(n) *suffix et (fem. ette) preceded by el*:

Masc.:	bras	cerveau	château	marteau	manteau
Fem.:	bande	côte	goutte	tarte	

(o) *suffix on (masc.)*:

1.					
jambe	dinde	ceinture	jupe	âne	
corde	gnide	aiguille	aigle	glace	
oaisse	carafe	rejet	médaille	lard	

2. *preceded by ill (masc.)*:

croix	cotte †	négre	carpe	
-------	---------	-------	-------	--

3. *preceded by er (masc.)*:

aile	vigne	bûche	mouche	chape
------	-------	-------	--------	-------

(p) *suffix eau (fem. elle)*:

Masc.	{	chèvre	orme	prune	cav
	{	tombe	barre	écrit	table
	{	corde	pomme	plat	tonne
Fem.	{	canne	prune	tour	ombre
	{	citron	tonne	dent	rus

(q) *suffix ot (masc.)*:

balle	île	bille	maille	Charles
-------	-----	-------	--------	---------

Exercice 3.

Write a list of the substantives formed by adding to the following adjectives the SUFFIXES indicated, and give the meaning of both the adjective and the compound noun.

(a) *suffix esse (fem.)*:

rude	sage	molle	haute	petite
hardie	faible	tendre	juste	triste

(b) *suffix ise (fem.)*:

fraiche	gourmand	marchand	sotte	fainéant
---------	----------	----------	-------	----------

(c) *suffix ie (fem.)*:

félon	perfide	monotone	barbare	jaloux
-------	---------	----------	---------	--------

* Those take *h* before *et*.† The derivative takes only one *t*.

(d) suffix **erie** (fem.):

coquette	drôle	espigle	fourbe	infirm
----------	-------	---------	--------	--------

(e) suffix **té** (fem.):

âcre	âpre	varié	immense	trivial
honnête	chrétien	avide *	irtime	facile
pauvre	dure	acide	sincère	absurde
ferme	nette	banal	timide	agile
ancienne	sûre	docile	tranquille	orédule

Exercise 2.

Write a list of the substantives formed from the following verbs, giving the meaning of both substantive and verb.

(a) by taking the infinitive as a substantive:

souvenir	sourire	souper	savoir	goûter
manger	déjeuner	devoir	avoir	toucher
rire	dîner	pouvoir	boire	dire

(b) by putting the verb in the present participle:

pencher	mendier	débit	assister	commander
protester	combattre	stimuler	commercer	habiter
assiéger	trancher	passer	conquérir	émigrer

(c) by putting the verb in the past participle:

Masc.	{ pendre	apercevoir	devoir	contenir
	{ procéder	réduire	précipiter	élire
Fem.	{ enjamber	bouffer	voler	gorger
	{ armer	revoir	ranger	couver
	{ conduire	aller	étendre	entrer
	{ venir	trancher	arriver	échapper
	{ fumer	monter	renommer	pousser

(d) by taking off the termination **r** to form feminine, and **er** or **tre** to form masculine nouns:

Masc.	{ arrêter	oublier	soupirer	plier
	{ galoper	crier	désirer	débuter
	{ siéger †	soucier	souhaiter	débattre
	{ appeler	rebuter	combattre	rabattre

Fem.	acier	rallonger	râper	vondanger
------	-------	-----------	-------	-----------

(e) by adding the suffix **ade** to the root:

griller	rouler	embrasser	parer
enfiler	fusiller	glisser	ruer

* All the following adjectives change the final *e* into *i* before the addition of *ade*.

† *Siege* keeps the *e*.

FORMATION OF SUBSTANTIVES.

(f) with suffix **age** (masc.):

laver	ouvrer	raffiner	plier	trier
témoigner	tirer	plier	savonner	châtrer

(g) with suffix **aue** (fem.):

dépendre	confier	délivrer	suffire	médire
tempérer	croire	espérer	obliger	prévoir
venger	ressembler	reconnaître	répugner	remontier
assister	souffrir	convenir	naître	obéir

(h) with suffix **eur** (masc.):

pêcher	pêcher	relier	tricher	venger
rire	tailler	compter	ramer	diviser
vaincre	flâner	fournir	enchérir	polir
régir	blanchir	acheter	acquérir	nager

(i) with suffix **is** (masc.):

hacher	loger	rouler	gâcher	semer
tailler	colorer	cliqueter	laver	croquer

(j) with suffix **ment** or **ement** (masc.):

affaïsser	abattre	agencer	amuser	bâiller
abonner	accubler	accomplir	appauvrir	agrandir
applaudir	amollir	établir	éclaircir	rugir

(k) with suffix **oir** (fem. **oire**):

Masc. {	cracher	saler	repousser	moncher
	peigner	fermer	réserver	percher
Fem. {	promener	mirer	abreuver	parler
	nager	mâcher	manger	balancer

(l) with suffix **on** (masc.):

jurer	plonger		brouiller
boucher	grognier	bâiller	couper

(m) with suffix **aison** (fem.):

combiner	conjuguer	terminer
comparer	lier	décliner

(n) with suffix **ison** (fem.):

garnir	guérir	trahir
--------	--------	--------

(o) with suffix **ure** (fem.):

aller	border	ferer	parer	blessar
chausser	user	voiler	couper	flétrir
noisir	meurtrir	polir	élargir	bouffir

Exercise 10.

Write all the derivatives of the following words with the meaning of each.

orange	dent	plume	ébène
rang	herbe	table	bouche
limon	médaille	jardin	corde
bûche	bulle	poivre	face

CHAPTER II.

OF THE ARTICLE.

45. The **article** is a word generally placed before the substantive, and agreeing with it in gender and in number.

There are two kinds of articles: 1. the **definite** article, placed before substantives the meaning of which is clearly determined, as *le cheval* in the following sentence: *le cheval de mon père est noir* (=my father's horse is black). The words *de mon père*, which accompany the substantive *cheval*, serve to determine it.

2. The **indefinite** article, placed before substantives the meaning of which is indeterminate, that is to say, vague, not precise, as *un cheval* in the following sentence: *un cheval s'est abattu* (=a horse has fallen down).

46. The definite article has both genders and numbers:

SINGULAR.

le (for the masc.)	le père (=the father)
la (for the fem.)	la mère (=the mother).

PLURAL.

les (for both genders)	les pères (=the fathers)
	les mères (=the mothers).

47. There are two remarks to make with reference to the definite article:—

1. When *le* or *la* comes before a substantive beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, the vowel (*e* or *a*) is cut off and replaced by an apostrophe. Thus—

<i>le</i> -amour (=the love)	must be written	<i>l'</i> amour
<i>la</i> -envie (=the envy)	"	<i>l'</i> envie
<i>le</i> -honneur(=the honour)	"	<i>l'</i> honneur.
<i>de le</i> -amour (=of the love)	"	<i>de l'</i> amour
<i>de la</i> -envie (=of the envy)	"	<i>de l'</i> envie
<i>à le</i> -honneur (=to the honour)	"	<i>à l'</i> honneur, etc.

This suppression of the vowel is called **elision**.

The word *elision* (=elision) is derived from the Latin acc. *elisionem*, which means "a striking out or forcing out."

2. When the masculine definite article, preceded by the prepositions *de* (=of, from), or *à* (=to), is placed before a substantive beginning with a consonnant or *h* aspirate, both the article and the preposition are blended into one word. Thus—

<i>de le</i> becomes	du :	du père (=of the father)
	:	du héros (=of the hero)
<i>à le</i>	au :	au père (=to the father)
	:	au héros (=to the hero).

Before all plural substantives, *de les* is changed into *des*, and *à les* into *aux* :—

des pères (=of the fathers),	instead of	de les pères
des héros (=of the heroes),	"	de les héros
des mères (=of the mothers),	"	de les mères
aux pères (=to the fathers),	"	à les pères
aux héros (=to the heroes),	"	à les héros
aux mères (=to the mothers),	"	à les mères.

This blending of the definite article with the two prepositions *de* and *à* is called **contraction**.

43. The **indefinite article** in French is—

un = a or an, before masculine substantives,
une = a or an, before feminine substantives,
des = some, before substantives of both genders;

as—

un homme (=a man), **des hommes** (=some men)
une femme (=a woman), **des femmes** (=some women).

N.B.—1. *Some* or *any*, which is frequently omitted in English, must be expressed in French, and repeated before every substantive: *Il a de l'argent* (=he has money); *j'ai des pommes et des poires* (=I have apples and pears).

2. If an adjective precedes the substantive, or if the sentence is negative, *de* only is used: *J'ai de bonnes pommes* (=I have good apples), *je n'ai pas de pommes* (=I have no apples).

3. The possessive case is expressed in two ways in English: My father's horse, and the horse of my father, but in French only one way (the latter) is used: *le cheval de mon père*.

The same construction must be used for expressions like: a gold watch, *i.e.* a watch made of gold, *une montre d'or*.

Exercice 11.

1. Le pain, du pain, de bon pain. 2. Le père a du pain. 3. Les bateaux sont sur l'eau. 4. Les joujoux des enfants. 5. Les fleurs des champs. 6. Les oiseaux ont des ailes. 7. Le marin est sur le rivage. 8. Donnez-moi des noisettes. 9. J'ai de bonne viande. 10. L'arbre a des branches. 11. Les bijoux de la mère. 12. Le maître de l'enfant. 13. L'éncrier de porcelaine.

¹ livre (m.), ² nous avons, ³ jeu (m.), ⁴ reine (f.), ⁵ racine (f.), ⁶ tronc (m.), ⁷ feuille (f.), ⁸ aile (f.), ⁹ herbe (f.), ¹⁰ rivage (m.), ¹¹ discours (m.), ¹² général (m.), ¹³ ville (f.), ¹⁴ chat (m.), ¹⁵ souris (f.), ¹⁶ marin (m.), ¹⁷ rame (f.), ¹⁸ voiture (f.), ¹⁹ princesse (f.), ²⁰ école (f.), ²¹ maître d'école (m.), ²² splendeur (f.), ²³ roi (m.), ²⁴ verre (m.).

1. The father has a book.¹ 2. We have ² some horses. 3. The sports ³ of the children. 4. The queen ⁴ has some jewels. 5. A tree has roots ⁵; a trunk ⁶ has branches and leaves.⁷ 6. The wings ⁸ of the birds. 7. The grass ⁹ of the fields. 8. From the boats to the shore.¹⁰ 9. The speeches ¹¹ of the generals.¹² 10. From a village (m.) to a town.¹³ 11. A cat¹⁴ and a mouse.¹⁵ 12. A collection (f.) of fans. 13. The sailor's¹⁶ oars.¹⁷ 14. To the carriage ¹⁸ of a princess.¹⁹ 15. Some bread, some meat, and some nuts. 16. The owls of the castles. 17. To a school²⁰ and to a schoolmaster.²¹ 18. The eyes of the grandfathers. 19. To the splendour ²² of the heavens. 20. The ancestors of the king.²³ 21. A glass ²⁴ inkstand.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATIONS.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. What is the article? | 6. When is the article contracted? |
| 2. How many kinds of articles are there? | 7. What is the <i>indéfinie</i> article? |
| 3. What is the <i>définie</i> article? | 8. How do you translate <i>some</i> or <i>any</i> ? |
| 4. When is the article <i>élidé</i> ? | 9. When do you use <i>des</i> and when <i>de</i> ? |
| 5. Define the word <i>élision</i> ? | 10. How is the possessive case expressed in French? |

CHAPTER III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE.

49. The adjective is a word added to the substantive to express the quality of the person or thing—that is to say, to indicate “what is” that person or thing. Thus, when we say, *L'homme est mortel* (=man is mortal), or, *Le cheval est noir* (=the horse is black), *mortel* makes us know that man is mortal; and *noir*, that the horse is black. *Mortel* and *noir* are adjectives.

The word *adjective* comes from the Latin *adjectivus*, and means “added to.”

50. There are three different sorts of adjectives:—

1. *Qualifying*.
2. *Determinative*.
3. *Indefinite*.

(1.) **Qualifying** adjectives express only the quality, as "*les grands hommes*" = the *great* (celebrated) men.

(2.) **Determinative** adjectives show precisely the object designated by the substantive to which they refer, as "*mon chapeau*" = *my* hat; "*ce cheval*" = *this* horse.

(3.) **Indefinite** adjectives mark that the substantive is used in a vague and general manner, as "*Chaque* pays a ses coutumes" = every country has its customs; "*plusieurs hommes sont venus*" = several men have come.

51. Adjectives take the mark of both genders and numbers. (See §§ 74-77.)

SECTION I.

FORMATION OF THE FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES.

52. GENERAL RULE.—The feminine of adjectives is formed by adding an **e mute** to the masculine:

méchant (= wicked) *méchant-e*
saint (= holy) *saint-e*

53. The masculine and feminine of adjectives ending in **e mute** are the same, as—

un chapeau large = a broad-brimmed hat
la rivière est large = the river is wide
un homme maigre = a thin man
une femme maigre = a thin woman
un homme sage = a wise man
une politique sage = a wise policy.

54. To form the feminine of the adjectives ending in **eil, el, en, et, and on**—the final *l, n, or t* must be doubled before the final **e mute** is added—

MASC.		FEM.	
<i>cruel</i>	= cruel	<i>cruelle</i>	
<i>pareil</i>	= alike	<i>pareille</i>	
<i>ancien</i>	= ancient	<i>ancienne</i>	
<i>européen</i>	= European	<i>européenne</i>	
<i>bon</i>	= good	<i>bonne</i>	
<i>muét</i>	= dumb	<i>muette</i>	

55. *A.* Adjectives ending in *ier*, *er*, and the six adjectives *complet*, *concret*, *discret*, *inquiet*, *replet*, *secret*, instead of doubling the final consonant, take a grave accent on the *e* which precedes the *r* or the *t*.

MASC.	FEM.
<i>complet</i> = complete	<i>complète</i>
<i>concret</i> = concrete	<i>concrète</i>
<i>discret</i> = discreet	<i>discrète</i>
<i>inquiet</i> = uneasy	<i>inquiète</i>
<i>replet</i> = replete	<i>replète</i>
<i>secret</i> = secret	<i>secrète</i>
<i>altier</i> = haughty	<i>altière</i>
<i>étranger</i> = foreign	<i>étrangère</i>

(See § 24.)

56. <i>B.</i> <i>beau</i> = beautiful, becomes <i>belle</i> in the feminine	
<i>jumeau</i> = twin,	<i>jumelle</i> "
<i>nouveau</i> = new,	<i>nouvelle</i> "
<i>fou</i> = foolish, mad,	<i>folle</i> "
<i>mou</i> = soft,	<i>molle</i> "
<i>vieux</i> = old	<i>vieille</i> "

Those adjectives were formerly spelt in the masculine *bel*, *jumel*, *nouvel*, *fol*, *mol*, *vieil*; hence the feminine in *elle* (*belle*, *jumelle*, etc.). The masculine forms *bel*, *nouvel*, *fol*, *mol*, *vieil* are still used before nouns which begin with a vowel or an *h* mute; thus we say:—

<i>un bel homme</i> = a fine man,	instead of <i>un beau homme</i>
<i>le nouvel an</i> = the new year,	" <i>le nouveau an</i>
<i>le fol enfant</i> = the mad, wild boy,	" <i>le fou enfant</i>
<i>le mol édedon</i> = the soft eider-down,	" <i>le mou édedon</i>
<i>un vieil ami</i> = an old friend,	" <i>un vieux ami</i> .

57. To form the feminine of adjectives ending in *x*, change *x* into *s*, and add *e* mute, as—

MASC.	FEM.
<i>jaloux</i> = jealous	<i>jalouse</i>
<i>heureux</i> = happy	<i>heureuse</i> .

Some adjectives even double that *s*, as—

MASC.	FEM.
<i>faux</i> = false	<i>fausse</i>
<i>roux</i> = sandy (of the hair)	<i>rousse</i> .

Exception—

<i>doux</i> = sweet	<i>douce</i> .
---------------------	----------------

Formerly *faux*, *roux* were spelt *faus*, *rous*, the feminine form being *fausse*, *rousse*, just as the feminine of *gras* is *grasse*, and that of *gros* is *grosse*.

58. The masculine adjectives ending in **f** form their feminine by changing the final **f** into **v**, and adding *e* mute:

MASC.	FEM.
<i>bref</i> = short	<i>brève</i>
<i>crainitif</i> = fearful, timid	<i>crainitive</i>
<i>neuf</i> = new	<i>neuве</i>

59. **Blanc** (=white), **franc** (=frank), **sec** (=dry). **frais** (=fresh, cool), have for their feminine, respectively, *blanche*, *franche*, *sèche*, *fraîche*.

But some adjectives ending in **c** hard (sounded as *k*), form their feminine by changing **c** into **que**, as—

MASC.	FEM.
<i>caduc</i> = decayed	<i>caduque</i>
<i>public</i> = public	<i>publique</i>
<i>turc</i> = turkish	<i>turque</i>

N.B. The adjective **Grec** (=Greek), keeps the final **c** before the last syllable **que**—i.e. = *Grecque*.

The feminine of **long** is *longue*, and that of **oblong**, *oblongue*. If *e* mute only had been added to *caduc*, *public*, *turc*, we should have had the forms *caduces*, *publices*, *turces*, in which the *c* would have lost its hard sound. In order to preserve it in the feminine form, it was necessary to replace *c* by its equivalent *qu*; for the same reason *long* (=long) makes *longue*, and not *longe* (which is a substantive feminine—e.g., “*longe de veau*” = a loin of veal.)

60. Adjectives ending in **eur** generally form their feminine by changing *eur* into *euse*; *trompeur* (=deceptive), *trompeuse*; *menteur* (=lying), *menteuse*.

Except *meilleur* (=better), *majeur* (=major), *mineur* (=minor), and a few others ending in **érieur**, *intérieur* (=interior), *inférieur* (=inferior), which follow the general rule, and form their feminine by adding an *e* mute to the masculine; *meilleure*, *majeure*, *mineure*, etc.

Accusateur (=accusing), *débiteur* (=owing), *protecteur* (=protecting), and a few others, make *accusatrice*, *débitrice*, *protectrice*, etc.

Pécheur (=sinful), *enchanteur* (=charming), *vengeur* (=avenging), make *pécheresse*, *enchanteresse*, *vengeresse*. We have already seen (§ 30), that *cresse* is only the softening of *euresse*.

61. The feminine of <i>bénin</i> (=good-natured)	is <i>bénigne</i>
" <i>malin</i> (=malicious)	" <i>maligne</i>
" <i>favori</i> (=favourite)	" <i>favorite</i>
" <i>calm</i> (=quiet, tranquil)	" <i>calme</i>
" <i>dissous</i> (=dissolved)	" <i>dissoute</i>
" <i>tiers</i> (=third)	" <i>tière</i>
" <i>bellot</i> (=pretty)	" <i>bellotte</i>
" <i>pâlot</i> (=pale)	" <i>pâlotte</i>
" <i>sot</i> (=foolish)	" <i>sotte</i>
" <i>vieillot</i> (=oldish)	" <i>vieillotte</i>
" <i>bas</i> (=low)	" <i>basse</i>
" <i>gras</i> (=fat)	" <i>grasse</i>
" <i>las</i> (=tired)	" <i>lasse</i>
" <i>épais</i> (=thick)	" <i>épaisse</i>
" <i>express</i> (=express, positive)	" <i>expresse</i>
" <i>gros</i> (=big, large)	" <i>grosse</i>
" <i>nul</i> (=nul)	" <i>nulle</i>
" <i>gentil</i> (=pretty, amiable)	" <i>gentille</i>
" <i>hébreu</i> (=Hebrew)	" <i>hébraïque</i>
" <i>traître</i> (=treacherous)	" <i>traîtresse</i>

(see § 30).

Notice also that a diæresis is placed over the final *e* in the feminine of adjectives when the masculine ends in *gu*, in order to keep the sound of the *u*: *aigu* (=acute), *contigu* (=contiguous), *aiguë*, *contiguë*; otherwise the *gue* would be pronounced as in *figue* (=fig).

Exercise 12.

1. Ma tante est riche. 2. L'histoire ancienne est intéressante. 3. La nature du tigre est cruelle. 4. La couleur du vin est vermeille. 5. Cette poire est bonne. 6. Vous êtes trop prudente pour ne pas être discrète. 7. Votre fille est jalouse. 8. La température est douce. 9. Sa chevelure est rousse. 10. Craignez la foudre vengeresse. 11. Cette robe est vieille. 12. Cette payeanne est grecque. 13. La viande est trop fraîche. 14. J'ai rencontré votre sœur favorite chez (at the house of) mon oncle. 15. Sa lettre est très-flatteuse.

¹ dame, ² L'Espagne, ³ dernièrement, ⁴ bienfaisant, ⁵ des pauvres, ⁶ je n'aime pas, ⁷ voix (*f*), ⁸ main (*f*), ⁹ puni, ¹⁰ coupable, ¹¹ je la regarde comme, ¹² affligé, ¹³ flotte (*f*), ¹⁴ armée (*f*), ¹⁵ nouvelle (*f*).

1. My favourite sister. 2. Your letter is too flattering. 3. This lady¹ is discreet and prudent. 4. Spain² is rich in fruits. 5. Have you met this countrywoman lately?³ 6. The queen is the benefactor⁴ of the poor.⁵ 7. I do not like⁶ (a) red (head of) hair. 8. He has a cruel disposition. 9. Her voice⁷ is sweet. 10. The avenging hand⁸ of the justice punished⁹ the guilty.¹⁰ 11. Your aunt is very kind; I consider her as¹¹ the consoler of the afflicted.¹² 12. The Turkish fleet¹³ and the Greek army.¹⁴ 13. The news¹⁵ is false. 14. That child's face is ruddy.

SECTION II.

FORMATION OF THE PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES.

62. GENERAL RULE.—The plural of adjectives is formed like that of substantives, *i.e.*, by adding *s* to the singular:

MASC. SING.
grand=great, tall
saint=holy

MASC. PL. FEM. PL.
grands *grandes*
saints *saintes*

63. When the adjective, in the singular, ends already in *s* or *x* there is no change in the plural masculine.

MASC. SING.
gros=big
épais=thick
glorieux=glorious

MASC. PL.
gros
épais
glorieux

Examples: *des hommes gros* (=big men); *des murs épais* (=thick walls); *des souvenirs glorieux* (=glorious remembrances).

64. EXCEPTIONS.—I. Adjectives ending in *al* change that termination into *aux*, in the masculine plural, as—

MASC. SING.
égal=equal
légal=legal
loyal=faithful

MASC. PLUR.
égaux
légaux
loyaux

The adjectives *fatal* (=fatal), *glacial* (=icy), *final* (=final), *naval* (=naval), and a few others to be learned by use, form their masculine plural by adding *s* to the singular (*fatals*, *glacials*, etc.).

II. Adjectives ending in *eau* take *x* in the plural masculine.

MASC. SING.
beau=beautiful
nouveau=new

MASC. PL.
beaux
nouveaux

NOTE ON THE POSITION OF ADJECTIVES.—Adjectives are generally placed after the substantive to which they relate; past participles used as adjectives *always* follow the substantive. *Beau*=fine, *bon*=good, *grand*=great, tall, *joli*=pretty, *petit*=little, *meilleur*=better, *tout*=all, *mauvais*=bad, *usually* precede the noun.

40 OF THE DEGREES OF SIGNIFICATION IN ADJECTIVES.

Exercise 13.

1. Les généraux sont vieux. 2. Les chapeaux sont neufs. 3. Les fils sont bons. 4. Les souliers sont grands. 5. Les hommes sont égaux. 6. Ces accidents sont fatals. 7. Les palais sont beaux. 8. Les sujets sont loyaux. 9. Les livres sont épais.

¹ élève, ² église, ³ étaient arrivés, ⁴ école (*f.*) communale, ⁵ spacieux, ⁶ salle (*f.*), ⁷ bail (*m.*), pl. baux, ⁸ difficulté (*f.*)

1. The hats are old. 2. These pupils¹ are equal. 3. These books are thick. 4. These men are loyal. 5. The churches² are old. 6. The royal palaces are beautiful. 7. The fatal days had come.³ 8. The parish school⁴ has very spacious⁵ rooms.⁶ 9. These leases⁷ are new. 10. Legal difficulties.⁸ 11. These books are moral.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. What is an <i>adjective</i>? 2. How many kinds of adjectives are there? 3. Define the adjective <i>qualifying</i>, <i>determinative</i>, <i>indefinite</i>. 4. How is the feminine of adjectives generally formed? 5. Give the feminine of <i>cruel</i>, <i>parait</i>, <i>bon</i>, etc.; also of <i>complet</i>, <i>concret</i>, etc., explain the peculiar formation of the feminine of <i>beau</i>, <i>nouveau</i>, etc. 6. Account for the formation of the feminine of adjectives in <i>x</i>. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 7. What is the feminine of adjectives ending in <i>f</i>? 8. Give the feminine of <i>blanc</i>, <i>turc</i>, <i>grec</i>, <i>long</i>, <i>trappeur</i>, <i>protecteur</i>, <i>meilleur</i>, <i>vengeur</i>, <i>béni</i>, <i>favori</i>. 9. How is the plural of adjectives formed? 10. Give the plural masculine of <i>beau</i>. 11. How do you form the plural masculine of adjectives ending in <i>al</i>? State some exceptions. 12. Where is the qualifying adjective placed in French? |
|---|--|

SECTION III.

OF THE DEGREES OF SIGNIFICATION IN ADJECTIVES.

65. There are three degrees of signification in adjectives: the *positive*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative*.

The **positive** is the adjective itself: *mon cheval est noir*=my horse is black; (*noir*=black, which expresses simply a quality, is the *positive*).

66. The adjective is in the **comparative** when it expresses the quality with an idea of *comparison*.

The **comparative** may either express—

(a.) *superiority*, in which case the adverb **plus** (=more), is placed before the adjective, and **que** (=than), after it, as—

mon cheval est plus noir que le vôtre=my horse is blacker than yours.

OF THE DEGREES OF SIGNIFICATION IN ADJECTIVES. 41

or, (b.) *inferiority*, in which case the adverb **moins** (=less), is placed before the adjective, and **que** (=than), after it—

mon cheval est moins noir que le vôtre=my horse is less black than yours (not so black as yours).

or, (c.) *equality*, in which case the adverb **aussi** (=as) precedes the adjective, and **que** (=as) follows it—

mon cheval est aussi noir que le vôtre=my horse is as black as yours.

In a negative sentence **si** is often used instead of **aussi** :—

mon cheval n'est pas si noir que le vôtre=my horse is not so black as yours.

There are, therefore, three comparatives : (a) of *superiority*; (b) of *inferiority*; (c) of *equality*.

67. Exceptions.—The three adjectives *petit* (=little or small), *bon* (=good), *mauvais* (=bad), form their comparative irregularly :—

Petit, comparative *moindre*; **bon**, comparative *meilleur*; **mauvais**, comparative *pire*. (*Petit* and *mauvais*, however, have also a regular comparative—*plus petit*, *plus mauvais*).

Do not mistake them for the adverbs **peu**, **bien**, **mal**, which become *moins*, *mieux*, *plus mal*, or *pis* in the comparative.

68. The adjective is in the *superlative* when it expresses—

(A.) A quality in the highest degree *without any comparison*, as *mon cheval est très-noir*=my horse is very black, *i.e.*, my horse is *quite* black. This is called the **superlative absolute**, and is expressed by *très*, *fort*, *bien*, *extrêmement*, etc., all meaning *very*.

(B.) A quality in the highest degree *either*—

(a.) *superior*, but as compared with other persons or objects of the same kind, as *mon cheval est le plus noir de tous les chevaux de la ville*=my horse is the blackest of all the horses in the town.

or (b.) *inferior*, as *ma sœur est la moins forte de nous tous*=my sister is the weakest (*lit.* the least strong) of us all.

These are called **superlatives relative**, and are formed by placing the article or a possessive adjective before the comparative.

The superlatives of **bon** are *très-bon* (absolute)=very good, and *le meilleur* (relative)=the best; **petit** makes *très-petit* (absolute)=very small, and *le moindre* (relative)=the least; **mauvais** makes *très-mauvais* (absolute)=very bad, and *le pire* (relative)=the worst.

Remember that in French **plus**, **moins**, &c., are generally repeated before each adjective; also that *very much* must not in any case be translated by *très-beaucoup*, but by **beaucoup** only.

Exercise 14.

1. La rose est la plus belle des fleurs. 2. Le meilleur livre de ma bibliothèque. 3. Il est moins aimable que son frère. 4. Vous êtes plus âgé que moi. 5. Il n'est pas si avancé que votre ami. 6. Le moindre mal. 7. Il va mieux. 8. Ce qui est pis, c'est que la bataille est perdue. 9. Ce livre est très-intéressant.

² Beau, ³ doux, ⁴ avancé, ⁵ cur, ⁶ santé (/), ⁷ jeune, ⁸ mort (/), ⁹ perte (/), bataille (/), ¹⁰ ceci, ¹¹ cela.

1. Fine,¹ finer, finest. 2. Gentle,² less gentle, the least gentle. 3. Small, smaller, smallest. 4. A good book, a better book. 5. He is as forward³ as they.⁴ 6. His health⁵ is better. 7. I am not so young⁶ as your sister. 8. The death⁷ of the general is less fatal than the loss⁸ of the battle.⁹ 9. This¹⁰ is well, that¹¹ is better. 10. My sister is much better.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>1. What are the three degrees of signification in adjectives?</p> <p>2. How many different comparatives are there? How are they formed?</p> | <p>3. Give the comparatives of <i>bon</i>, <i>petit</i>, <i>mauvais</i>.</p> <p>4. How is the superlative formed?</p> <p>5. State what are the different kinds of superlative.</p> |
|--|--|

SECTION IV.

FORMATION OF ADJECTIVES.

69. French adjectives are formed in the same way as nouns—that is to say, by *composition* and by *derivation*.

Adjectives formed by *composition*:— (a.) either two simple adjectives are joined together, such as *aigre* (=sour) and *doux* (=sweet), to form a compound adjective: *aigre-doux*=sourish; or (b.) a prefix is placed before simple adjectives (*see* § 88 [b.]), for the purpose of giving them a new meaning; as *bien-heureux* (=happy, blessed); *mal-heureux* (=unhappy), *in-constant* (=variable); *sous-marin* (=submarine); *sur-humain* (=superhuman). The prefixes most often used are: **archi, anti, bien, demi, in, mal, sous, sur, ultra.**

70. New adjectives are formed by *derivation* with the help of substantives, adjectives, and verbs *already existing in French*:—

- (a.) **Substantives** (*pierreux*=stony, from *pierre*=stone);
- (b.) **Adjectives** (*noirâtre*=blackish, from *noir*=black);
- (c.) **Verbs** (*trompeur*=deceptive, from *tromper*=to deceive).

71. New adjectives are formed from substantives by adding to the substantives the terminations **eux, ain, in, é, er, u.** Thus: *courage* (=courage), *courageux* (=courageous); *monde* (=world), *mondain* (=worldly); *enfant* (=child), *enfantin* (=childish); *aile* (=wing), *ailé* (=winged); *mensonge* (=lie), *mensonger* (=untrue, lying); *barbe* (=beard), *barbu* (=bearded).

72. New adjectives are formed from existing adjectives with the help of the four terminations—**âtre, et (and elet), ot and aud.** These are called *diminutive suffixes*.

Ex.: *gris* (=grey), *grisâtre* (=greyish); *aigre* (=sour), *aigret* and *aigrelet* (=sourish); *vieux* (=old), *vieillot* (=oldish); *lourd* (=heavy), *lourdaut* (=clumsy).

73. The French language makes new adjectives from verbs, either by taking the **participles** (*present* or *past*) of the verb, or by adding to the stem of the verb the three suffixes **able, ard, if.** Thus *charmer*

(=to charm) gives *charmant* (charming); *polir* (=to polish), *poli* (=polished); *compar-er* (=to compare), *comparable* (comparable); *pill-er* (=to plunder), *pillard* (=plundering); *pens-er* (=to think), *pensif* (=pensive).

Exercise 15.

Write a list of compound adjectives by adding to the following one of the **prefixes** enumerated below; give the feminine of each, and also the meaning of the compound words:—

- (a.) prefix *archi*, ducal, diaconal, épiscopal, fou.
- (b.) " *anti*, social, fébrile, religieux, monarchique.
- (c.) " *bien*, heureux, séant, aimé, faisant.
- (d.) " *demi*, nu, fin, mort, fermé.
- (e.) " *in*, constant, suffisant, différent, variable.
- (f.) " *mal*, formé, sain, habile, heureux, intentionné.
- (g.) " *sous*, marin, jacent, terrain, axillaire.
- (h.) " *ultra*, libéral, mondain, royaliste, zodiacal.

Write in the same manner a list of derived adjectives:—

a. From substantives with the suffix:

- eux*: pierre, rabot, joie, brume, heur.
- ain*: monde, Rome, château, proche.
- in*: enfant, mal.
- é*: aile, bât, sangle, laite.
- er*: message, mensonge, passage, potage.
- u*: pointe, barbe, branche, bosse.

(b.) From verbs with the suffix:

- able*: comparer, séparer, voler, punir.
- ard*: piller, bayer, vanter, brouiller.
- if*: penser, pousser.

(c.) From adjectives with the diminutive suffix:

- âtre*: noir, bel, (beau), rouge, doux.
- et(élet)*: aigre, rond, mou, fou.
- ot*: vieil (vieux), pâle.
- eul*: noir, sale, rouge, fin.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. How do the French form new adjectives from adjectives already existing?
2. What are the parts of the verb which are used in the formation of adjectives?
3. Give a list of adjectives formed with the prefixes *bien*, *sous*; and with the suffixes *âtre*, *if*, *able*, etc.
4. How are adjectives formed from substantives?
5. What suffixes are added to the stem of the verb?

SECTION V.

AGREEMENT OF THE ADJECTIVE WITH THE
SUBSTANTIVE.

74. The adjective takes the same gender and number as the substantive which it qualifies. Thus: *Dieu est clément* (=God is clement); *ma mère est bonne* (=my mother is good); *les hommes sont mortels* (=men are mortal).

75. When an adjective qualifies several substantives in the singular, it is put in the plural. Thus: *le riche et le pauvre sont égaux devant Dieu* (=the rich and the poor are equal in the sight of God).

76. If the substantives are of different genders, the adjective is put in the masculine plural. Thus: *le roi et la reine sont prudents* (=the king and the queen are prudent).

SECTION VI.

DETERMINATIVE ADJECTIVES.

77. There are three sorts of determinative adjectives:

Numeral adjectives,
Demonstrative adjectives,
Possessive adjectives.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

78. Numeral adjectives are those which denote number, order, or rank.

There are two kinds of numeral adjectives: the cardinal, and the ordinal.

79. Numeral adjectives indicating the number or quantity of objects, as *trois* (=three), *quatre* (=four), *cinq* (=five), are called cardinal.

With the exception of *zéro*, which comes from the Arab, all the numeral adjectives are of Latin origin; for the French number as the Romans did, and have admitted their terms of numeration.

Septante, octante, and nonante, were formerly used as synonyms of *soixante-dix, quatre-vingts, and quatre-vingt-dix*, respectively. During the Middle Ages the *even decades* (60, 80, 120, 140, etc.) stood thus—

trois-vingts for 60
quatre-vingts for 80

six-vingts for 120
sept-vingts for 140;

—that is to say, three times twenty, four times twenty, etc. Traces of this ancient usage remain even in our day (to say nothing of *quatre-vingts*=80), as in the hospital "*des Quinze-Vingts*" ($15 \times 20 = 300$), founded by St. Louis to support 300 crusaders, whose eyes had been put out by the infidels; so also Bossuet and Voltaire have made use of the expression *six-vingts ans* for 120 ans (=120 years).

Million (=million), and *milliard* (=a thousand millions), are derived from *mille* with the suffixes *on* and *ard*.

NOTE.—Care must be taken not to confound *un* (= a or an) indefinite article, with *un* (=one), numeral adjective.

30. Ordinal numeral adjectives point out the *rank* or *place* occupied by the object. They are formed, with the exception of *premier* (=first), and *second* (=second), by adding the termination *-ième* to the cardinal adjectives, as—

trois = three
six = six
sept = seven
vingt = twenty

trois-ième = third
six-ième = sixth
sept-ième = seventh
vingt-ième = twentieth, etc.

When the cardinal adjective ends in *e* mute, that *e* is cut off, as—

quatre = four
onze = eleven
douze = twelve

quatr-ième = fourth
onz-ième = eleventh
douz-ième = twelfth.

➤ *Neuf* (=nine), changes *f* into *v* :

neuf = nine

neu-v-ième = ninth.

Cinq (=five), adds *u* before the termination *-ième* :

cinq = five

cinq-u-ième = fifth.

Formerly *prime, tiers, quint* were used in French as well as *premier, troisième, cinquième*. Traces of these old forms remain in some few locutions, as *de prime-abord* (=at first sight); *de prime saut* (=spontaneously); *le tiers état* (=the third estate, the Commons); *Charles-Quint* (=Charles the Fifth, Emperor of Germany and King of Spain, the great rival of Francis the First, King of France); *Sixte-Quint* (=Pope Sixtus Quintus, the fifth).

N.B.—The cardinal number is used instead of the ordinal in the following cases: (a.) after the names of Sovereigns: *Henri quatre* (= Henry IV.); (b.) in speaking of the days of the month: *le trois mars* (=the third of March.)

But *Premier* (=first) is an exception to this rule: *François premier* (=Francis I.); *le premier mars* (=the first of March). In compound numbers, *first* is to be translated by *un*: *Le pape Jean vingt et un* (= Pope John XXI.); *le vingt et un juin* (=the twenty-first of June).

31. Nouns of number which indicate a certain quantity (as *une dizaine**=a collection of ten, *une centaine*=a hundred), are connected with the numeral adjectives, as are also the nouns which denote the different parts of a whole (*le quart*=the fourth; *la moitié*=the half), and those which are used for multiplication (*le double*=the double; *le triple*=the treble, threefold; *le centuple*=centuple, a hundredfold).

A Comparative Table of the Numeral Adjectives.

CARDINAL NUMBERS.

N.B.—*Un* is the only cardinal which takes the mark of the feminine: *une*.

1. un, une
2. deux
3. trois
4. quatre
5. cinq
6. six
7. sept
8. huit
9. neuf
10. dix
11. onze
12. douze
13. treize
14. quatorze
15. quinze
16. seize
17. dix-sept
18. dix-huit

ORDINAL NUMBERS.

N.B.—*Premier* and *second* are the only ordinals which are variable: *première, seconde*.

- 1st. premier, première
- 2nd. second, —e, or deuxième
- 3rd. troisième
- 4th. quatrième
- 5th. cinquième
- 6th. sixième
- 7th. septième
- 8th. huitième
- 9th. neuvième
- 10th. dixième
- 11th. onzième
- 12th. douzième
- 13th. treizième
- 14th. quatorzième
- 15th. quinzième
- 16th. seizième
- 17th. dix-septième
- 18th. dix-huitième

* The article *a* which precedes these collectives in English, in sentences like the following, is expressed in French by *la*: *combien la douzaine* (=how much a dozen?).

CARDINAL NUMBERS—*continued*.

19. dix-neuf
 20. vingt
 21. vingt et un
 22. vingt-deux
 23. vingt-trois
 24. vingt-quatre
 25. vingt-cinq
 26. vingt-six
 27. vingt-sept
 28. vingt-huit
 29. vingt-neuf
 30. trente
 31. trente et un, etc.
 40. quarante
 41. quarante et un, etc.
 50. cinquante
 51. cinquante et un, etc.
 60. soixante
 61. soixante et un, etc.
 70. soixante-dix
 71. soixante et onze
 72. soixante-douze
 73. soixante-treize
 74. soixante-quatorze
 75. soixante-quinze
 76. soixante-seize
 77. soixante-dix-sept
 78. soixante-dix-huit
 79. soixante-dix-neuf
 80. quatre-vingts*
 81. quatre-vingt-un, etc.
 90. quatre-vingt-dix
 91. quatre-vingt-onze
 92. quatre-vingt-douze
 93. quatre-vingt-treize
 94. quatre-vingt-quatorze
 95. quatre-vingt-quinze
 96. quatre-vingt-seize
 97. quatre-vingt-dix-sept
 98. quatre-vingt-dix-huit
 99. quatre-vingt-dix-neuf
 100. cent
 101. cent un
 102. cent deux
 103. cent trois
 200. deux cents*
 300. trois cents*, etc.

rounded

of units

ORDINAL NUMBERS—*continued*.

- 19th. dix-neuvième
 20th. vingtième
 21st. vingt et unième
 22nd. vingt-deuxième
 23rd. vingt-troisième
 24th. vingt-quatrième
 25th. vingt-cinquième
 26th. vingt-sixième
 27th. vingt-septième
 28th. vingt-huitième
 29th. vingt-neuvième
 30th. trentième
 31st. trente et unième
 40th. quarantième
 41st. quarante et unième.
 50th. cinquantième
 51st. cinquante et unième
 60th. soixantième
 61st. soixante et unième, etc.
 70th. soixante-dixième
 71st. soixante et onzième
 72nd. soixante-douzième
 73rd. soixante-treizième
 74th. soixante-quatorzième
 75th. soixante-quinzième
 76th. soixante-seizième
 77th. soixante-dix-septième
 78th. soixante-dix-huitième
 79th. soixante-dix-neuvième
 80th. quatre-vingtième
 81st. quatre-vingt-unième, etc.
 90th. quatre-vingt-dixième
 91st. quatre-vingt-onzième
 92nd. quatre-vingt-douzième
 93rd. quatre-vingt-treizième
 94th. quatre-vingt-quatorzième
 95th. quatre-vingt-quinzième
 96th. quatre-vingt-seizième
 97th. quatre-vingt-dix-septième
 98th. quatre-vingt-dix-huitième
 99th. quatre-vingt-dix-neuvième
 100th. centième
 101st. cent-unième
 102nd. cent-deuxième
 103rd. cent-troisième
 200th. deux-centième
 300th. trois-centième, etc.

* See Syntax, Chapter III. Vingt and cent take a when multiplied by a number and not followed by another, so deux cent un (no 201) has no a.

CARDINAL NUMBERS (*continued*).

1000. mille*
5000. cinq mille
10,000. dix mille
1,000,000. million

ORDINAL NUMBERS (*continued*).

1000th. millième
5000th. cinq millième
10,000th. dix millième
1,000,000th. millionième.

X N.B.—The words *one*, *and*, in expressions like *cent-deux* = *one hundred and two*, are suppressed. *Million* and numbers above are substantives, and must be followed by *de*.

Exercise 16.

1. Soixante-treize; Charles Quint; Louis quatorze. 2. J'ai six mille volumes dans ma bibliothèque. 3. Le premier janvier. 4. L'an mil huit cent soixante. 5. Cette armée se compose de vingt mille hommes. 6. Il a perdu deux cents francs, et sa sœur en a gagné deux cent cinquante. 7. Une douzaine de chemises. 8. Il a mangé le tiers de sa fortune. 9. J'ai dépensé un millier de francs pendant mon voyage. 10. Il est une heure un quart. 11. Il est deux heures moins dix.

*Pape Pie, *furent massacrés à, *perdu, *combien, *argent, *gagné, *coûtent
*Pouvez-vous manger, *gâteau (m.), *dépensé, *un millier (m.), *livre (f.)
**dixes.

1. 99; 2,846,578. 2. (The) Pope Pius¹ the Fifth. 3. The Protestants were murdered in² Paris in 1572. 4. The twenty-first of January. 5. Your brother has lost³ 375 francs. 6. How much⁴ (of) money⁵ have you gained⁶? 25,000 francs. 7. These shirts cost⁷ 36 shillings a dozen. 8. Four is the third of twelve. 9. Can you eat⁸ thirteen cakes⁹? 10. He has spent¹⁰ about a thousand¹¹ (of) pounds.¹² 11. It was ten minutes to four. 12. We dine¹³ at a quarter past seven.

II.—DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

82. Demonstrative adjectives are used to point out the person or thing spoken of:—

ce château = this castle *ce héros* = this hero.

The demonstrative adjectives are:—

<i>ce</i>	for the masculine singular :	<i>ce lion</i>	= this lion
<i>cette</i>	for the feminine singular :	<i>cette femme</i>	= this woman
<i>ces</i>	{ for the plural of both genders.	<i>ces garçons</i>	= these boys
		<i>ces filles</i>	= these girls.

* *Mille*, in dates of the Christian era, is spelt *mil*.

cet is placed before masculine substantives beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, instead of **ce** :—

cet homme = this man, not **ce homme**

cet enfant = this child, „ **ce enfant**.

ci In order to show whether the person or thing we speak of is **near** or **far** from us the adverbs **-ci** (=here) and **-là** (=there) are joined to the substantive by a hyphen, as :—

cet enfant-ci est brun = *this* child (i.e. close to me) is dark

cet enfant-là est blond = *that* child (i.e. far from me) is fair.

-ci is the abridgment of **ici**, adverb of place.

Exercise 17.

1. Cette gravure est très-belle. 2. Cet enfant a un vilain caractère. 3. J'aime ce cheval-ci, mais ce cheval-là est trop vieux pour moi. 4. Ces jardins-ci sont la propriété de mon père. 5. Cette dame est très-aimable. 6. Pourquoi battez-vous ces enfants-là? 7. Que dites-vous de ces jeunes personnes? 8. Ces raisins sont excellents. 9. Ce dictionnaire-ci n'est pas complet. 10. Ces souliers-là sont trop étroits.

*Souler (m.), blessent, *jeune demoiselle, *dites que, *déchiré, *aimable vieillard, *maire (m.), *prenez, *mûr, *vu, *large, *propriété (f.), *caractère (m.), *battre, *habit (m.) & m.*

1. This child. 2. These generals. 3. I do not like these old horses. 4. This garden belongs to my father. 5. Those shoes hurt¹ that young lady.² 6. You say that³ this engraving is torn.⁴ 7. That amiable old man⁵ is the mayor⁶ of the town. 8. Take⁷ these grapes; they are ripe.⁸ 9. Have you seen⁹ that dictionary? 10. These hats are too wide.¹⁰ 11. This lady has a fine estate.¹¹ 12. The temper¹² of that child is abominable. 13. Dust¹³ this coat.¹⁴

III.—POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

83. Possessive adjectives are placed before the noun to point out to whom the object belongs :—

mon cheval = my horse—i.e. the horse which belongs to me
ton chapeau = thy hat—i.e. the hat „ „ thee
son bâton = his stick—i.e. the stick „ „ him.

The possessive adjectives are :—

A. When the object belongs to one person only (**mon chien**=my dog):—

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
MASC.	FEM.	(FOR BOTH GENDERS.)
mon	ma	mes = my
ton	ta	tes = thy
son	sa	ses = his, her, its.

B. When the object belongs to several persons at the same time (**notre chien**=our dog; **nos chevaux**=our horses):—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
(FOR BOTH GENDERS.)	(FOR BOTH GENDERS.)
notre	nos = our
votre	vos = your
leur	leurs = their

53 The masculine forms **mon**, **ton**, **son** are placed before feminine nouns beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, instead of the feminine **ma**, **ta**, **sa**, in order to prevent the hiatus which the meeting of two vowels would produce; thus we must say :—

mon âme	= my soul,	instead of ma-âme
ton épée	= thy sword,	" ta-épée
son humeur	= his or her temper,	" sa-humeur.

In Old French **mon** was strictly kept for masculine, and **ma** for feminine nouns. Whenever **ma**, **ta**, **sa** came before a word beginning with a vowel, the *a* was elided, as it is now for the feminine definite article **la**, and people then said **m'âme**, **t'épée**, **s'humour**, just as we now say **l'âme**, **l'épée**, **l'humour**. Towards the fourteenth century the use of the masculine forms **mon**, **ton**, **son** superseded this elision, which has, however, survived in the term of endearment **m'amie**, **ma amie** (=my love), which later on became, by corruption, **ma mie**; hence came the expressions **ta mie**, **sa mie**=thy, his lady-love, etc.

NOTE that in French, the possessive adjective agrees with the thing possessed, not with the possessor; also, that it must be repeated before each noun: **son père**, **son frère et sa sœur** (=his, or her father, brother and sister).

Exercice 19.

1. Où est votre plume, et où sont mes livres?
2. Notre maison est grande.
3. Je parlerai de vous à mon père.
4. Vos crainctes.

sont ridicules. 5. Ma montre avance. 6. Ton habit est taché. 7. Je vous montrerai ses gravures. 8. Ma mère est à la campagne. 9. Son cheval est boiteux. 10. J'aime beaucoup nos cousins; ils sont très-aimables.

* Amitié (*f.*) pour, * sincère, * loi (*f.*), * emprunte, * livre (*m.*), * mère (*f.*), * A la campagne (*f.*), * vous montrerai-je, * sur la table, * gant (*m.*), * canne (*f.*), * quand, * maison (*f.*), * brûlé, * parlerai, * rapporté, * chaque pays, * coutume (*f.*)

1. Your engravings are good. 2. My friendship for¹ you is sincere.² 3. His laws³ are supreme.⁴ 4. These books⁵ belong to my mother.⁶ 5. Our cousins (*m.*) are in the country.⁷ 6. I have lost my watch. 7. Shall I show you⁸ his horses? 8. My pens are on the table.⁹ 9. Give me my coat, my gloves,¹⁰ and my walking-stick.¹¹ 10. When¹² have you seen your cousin? 11. His house¹³ is burnt.¹⁴ 12. I shall speak¹⁵ to your officer. 13. Her friend has brought back¹⁶ his book. 14. Each country¹⁷ has its own laws and customs.¹⁸

SECTION VII.

INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.

81. Indefinite adjectives denote that the noun is used in a vague and general manner, as: **aucune** lettre n'est arrivée (=no letter has arrived); **quelque** malheur nous menace (=some misfortune threatens us).

These adjectives are twelve in number:

1. **aucun** (*fem. aucune*)=any, no, none; 2. **autre**=other, another; 3. **certain** (*fem. certaine*)=some, some one, a certain; 4. **chaque**=each; 5. **maint** (*fem. mainte*)=many; 6. **même**=same; 7. **nul** (*fem. nulle*)=no, none; 8. **plusieurs**=several; 9. **quelconque***=whatever, whatsoever; 10. **quelque**=some; 11. **tel** (*fem. telle*)=such; 12. **tout** (*plur. masc. tous, fem. sing. toute*)=all, every.

N.B.—**Certain** is an indefinite adjective when it means *un*, *quelque*=one, some, as: *certain homme* (=a man, some man). But when it means *sûr* (=sure), it is a qualificative adjective, as: *j'en suis certain* (=I am sure of it).

* *quelconque* always follows the noun.

Aucun and **nul** are accompanied by **ne**: *Je ne connais aucun de ses frères* (= I don't know any of his brothers).

Exercise 19.

1. Je n'ai aucune envie de punir un autre élève. 2. Certain renard gaseon; d'autres disent morusard. 3. Chaque jour amène avec lui son travail. 4. Maint écrivassier se croit poète. 5. J'ai rencontré plusieurs soldats dans la rue. 6. Il n'a nulle pitié. 7. Tel maître, telle maison. 8. Tous les matins je lis un livre quelconque. 9. Tel qui rit vendredi, dimanche pleurera. 10. Plusieurs de vos amis sont ici.

¹ élève (m.), ² ne sortira vendredi, ³ semaine (f.), ⁴ écrivassier (m.), ⁵ voiture (f.), ⁶ ferait plus de, ⁷ vu, ⁸ personne (f.), ⁹ sentiment (m.), ¹⁰ vais, ¹¹ rebelle (m.), ¹² renard (m.).

1. Have you (of) such pupils?¹ 2. None of these soldiers shall go out on Friday.² 3. Every week³ my father brings with him many a scribbler.⁴ 4. Like master, like man. 5. Your friend has several horses. 6. Are you of another opinion (f)?⁵ 7. I have seen several fine carriages.⁶ 8. Another poet would do more⁷ work every day. 9. Have you seen⁷ the same persons?⁸ 10. Every child likes (the) cakes. 11. He has no sense⁹ of envy. 12. I am going¹⁰ to punish several rebels.¹¹ 13. I have met no fox¹² in the street.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATIONS.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Give a list of the <i>determinative adjectives</i>. 2. What are the <i>numeral adjectives</i>? 3. Give a list of the cardinal numbers. 4. What is the difference between <i>un</i> indefinite article, and <i>un</i> numeral? 5. How do you form the French ordinal numbers? 6. What are the numerals which serve to multiply? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 7. Write down the <i>demonstrative adjectives</i>. 8. Remark on the demonstrative adjective <i>ce</i>. 9. Give a list of the <i>possessive adjectives</i>. 10. State the peculiarities which affect the words <i>mon, ton, son</i>. 11. What are the <i>indefinite adjectives</i>? 12. Remark on the adjective <i>certain</i>. |
|--|---|

CHAPTER IV.

OF THE PRONOUN.

85. The **pronoun** is a word which takes the place of the noun. In the sentence *Henri est espiègle, mais il deviendra reconnaissable* (= Henry is frolicsome, but he

will grow steady), the word **il**, being put there instead of **Henri**, is a pronoun.

Pronoun is the Latin *pronomen* (*pro*=instead of, *nomen*=noun).

86. The pronoun takes the gender and number of the noun instead of which it is used. *Les hirondelles partent; elles vont dans les pays chauds* (=the swallows are on the wing; they go to warm countries). **Elles** is feminine plural, because **hirondelles** is feminine plural. *Votre maison est grande; la mienne est plus petite* (=your house is large; mine is smaller). **La mienne** is feminine singular to agree with **maison**.

87. There are five kinds of pronouns:—

1. *The* **personal**.
2. *The* **demonstrative**.
3. *The* **possessive**.
4. *The* **relative**.
5. *The* **indefinite**.

SECTION I.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

88. **Personal pronouns** are those which point out the persons, and indicate the part they play in the speech.

In the sentence *je devine que tu viens de chez lui* (=I guess you come from his house), we distinguish at once three different persons, *je*, *tu*, *lui*, as being the actors in this little drama. These actors have different parts, which are indicated here by three distinct words: the first part (*je*=I) is that of the actor *who speaks*; the second (*tu*=thou), that of the actor *spoken to*; and the third (*lui*=him), that of the actor *spoken of*.

These three characters, or rather parts, are called **personnes**=persons (from the Latin [*dramatis*] *personæ*), and represented by the **personal pronouns**, which point out beings *by the part they act in* that short piece called a *sentence*.

89. The personal pronouns are divided into *conjunctive*, *disjunctive*, and *reflective*.

The **conjunctive personal pronouns**, or **pronouns** immediately connected with the verb, are:—

Singular.

Je = I; tu = thou; il, elle = he, she, it.

Nom. Je = I.	tu = thou.	il, elle = he, she, it.
Gen.		en = of him, her, it.
Dat. me = to me.	te = to thee.	lui, y (of things) = to it, to them.
Acc. me = me.	te = thee.	le, la = him, her, it.

Plural.

Nous = we; vous = you; ils, elles = they.

Nom. Nous = we.	vous = you.	ils, elles = they.
Gen.		en = of them.
Dat. nous = to us.	vous = to you.	leur = to them.
Acc. nous = us.	vous = you.	les = them.

90. All conjunctive pronouns, used as subject, are placed *before* the verb, except when the sentence is interrogative: **il vient** (=he comes); **vient-il?** (=does he come?).

91. When used as object, all the conjunctive pronouns are placed immediately *before* the verb, unless the verb is in the imperative and used affirmatively: **Je le connais** (=I know him); **ne le fais pas** (=do not do it); **fais-le** (=do it).

92. When a verb governs two conjunctive pronouns, both are placed before the verb, the dative being put first, and the accusative next: **Je te le donne** (=I give it to you); **te le donne-t-il?** (=does he give it to you?).

However, **lui, leur** are to be put after **le, la, les**.
Je le lui donne (=I give it to him).

N.B.—1. All these pronouns are used for both genders, with the exception of:—

il, le, ils, eux, which are reserved for the masculine; and
elle, la, elles, which are reserved for the feminine.

2. Vous is used for politeness' sake instead of **tu**, and the adjective remains in the singular: **Paul, vous êtes triste** (=Paul, you are sad).

3. The pronouns **le, la, les** must not be mistaken for the definite article **le, la, les**, the former always

accompany a verb, the latter a substantive: *Voici le livre que je vous ai promis, prenez-le* (=here is the book I promised you; take it).

4. **Leur** is a personal pronoun when it means *à eux, à elles* (=to them), and accompanies a verb. In that case it never takes the mark of the plural, as: *Je leur ai donné un livre* (=I have given them a book). It is a possessive adjective when it signifies *d'eux, d'elles* (=of them), and is placed before a substantive. It must then take the mark of the plural, as: *Ces enfants ont perdu leurs livres* (=these children have lost their books). **Leur**, possessive adjective, never takes the mark of the feminine: **Leur** fille (=their daughter), **leurs** filles (=their daughters).

5. **En** is a pronoun when it is used instead of *de lui* (=of him); *d'elle* (=of her); *d'eux, d'elles* (=of them): *J'aime cet enfant et j'en suis aimé* (=I love this child, and I am loved by him). Otherwise it is either an adverb, *j'en viens* (=I come from thence), or a preposition, *je suis en France* (=I am in France).

6. **Y** is a pronoun when it means *à cette chose* (=to this thing), *à ces choses* (=to these things), *à cela* (=to that): *L'affaire est importante, j'y donnerai tous mes soins* (=the affair is important; I shall bestow all my care upon it). Otherwise it is an adverb: *Tu y cours* (=thou runnest there.)

93. The **disjunctive personal pronouns**, or pronouns used apart from the verb, are:—

Singular.

Moi = I; **toi** = thou; **lui, elle** = he, she.

Nom.	Moi =I.	toi =thou.	lui, elle =he, she.
Gen.	de moi.	de toi.	de lui, d'elle.
Dat.	à moi.	à toi.	à lui, à elle.
Acc.	moi.	toi.	lui, elle.

Plural.

Nous = we; **vous** = you; **eux, elles** = they.

Nom.	Nous =we.	vous =you.	eux, elles =they.
Gen.	de nous.	de vous.	d'eux, d'elles.
Dat.	à nous.	à vous.	à eux, à elles.
Acc.	nous.	vous.	eux, elles.

94. The disjunctive pronouns are always the same, whether used as subject or as object of a verb. They are used as subject only when it is necessary to establish a distinction between two persons or things, or for emphasis: **Lui** m'a donné de l'argent, **eux** m'ont donné à manger (=he gave me money, they gave me to eat); **moi**, je vous le dis (=I tell you so).

95. These pronouns are used in French after the verb **être**, after a preposition or conjunction, and also in answer to questions: *C'est moi* (=it is I); *c'était lui* (=it was he); *ce livre est à moi* (=this book is mine, belongs to me); *il parle contre toi* (=he speaks against you); *il est plus grand que moi* (=he is taller than I); *qui vient là?* **Toi** (=who comes there? I).

In order to give still greater force to the expression, the adjective *même* is joined by a hyphen to these pronouns, as:—

Singular.	Plural.
moi-même = myself	nous-mêmes = ourselves
toi-même = thyself	vous-mêmes = yourselves
lui-même = himself	eux-mêmes } themselves.
elle-même = herself	elles-mêmes }
soi-même = oneself, himself, herself, etc.	

96. The **reflective personal pronoun** (conjunctive, *se*; disjunctive, *soi*) is used only for the third person, and for both genders and both numbers. The first and second persons are formed with the pronouns given above.

N.B.—In modern French, *soi* is only used when the subject of the verb is *on*, *tout le monde*, *chacun*, etc., or after an impersonal verb.

Exercice 20:

1. Il travaille avec soin.
2. C'est moi qui irai le voir.
3. Je crois que c'est à toi qu'il parle.
4. Adressez-vous à lui.
5. Elle lui parlera de votre affaire.
6. Je le vois d'ici.
7. Elle est si bonne que je veux la récompenser.
8. Ces fleurs me plaisent.

beaucoup. 9. Croyez-moi, consentez-y. 10. J'ai lu votre livre, et j'en parlerai dans la revue.

¹ marche, ² vois, ³ voyons, ⁴ pensez, ⁵ j'ontent, ⁶ dansent, ⁷ donnerai, ⁸ qui plaisent, ⁹ croyez, ¹⁰ récompenser, ¹¹ consentez, ¹² parlo, ¹³ venons, ¹⁴ en, ¹⁵ montr'rai, ¹⁶ c'était, ¹⁷ parles, ¹⁸ souvenez-vous de, ¹⁹ loin, ²⁰ allez, ²¹ allons, ²² font tout, ²³ on ne doit jamais parler, ²⁴ flattent, ²⁵ sais.

Conjunctive pronouns: 1. I walk;¹ thou seest² these flowers; he has read your book; your sisters are very good. 2. She works with much (of) care; we see,³ you think,⁴ they (masc.) play,⁵ they (fem.) dance.⁶ 3. I shall give⁷ him these flowers which please⁸ (to) him. 4. Go and (to) see him. 5. You believe⁹ that I wish to recompense¹⁰ her. 6. We have read the review of your book. 7. I consent¹¹ to it; I speak¹² of him; he has some of them; we come¹³ from that place.¹⁴ 8. I will show¹⁵ it to you; don't show it to her.

Disjunctive pronouns. 1. It is he; it was¹⁶ I; speak¹⁷ to them (masc.); remember¹⁸ them (fem.) 2. Far¹⁹ from thee; go²⁰ with them; let us go²¹ there ourselves; they do everything²² themselves (fem.). 3. One should never speak²³ of one's self. 4. They flatter²⁴ themselves. 5. I who was there (I) know²⁵ it better than he.

SECTION II.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

97. Demonstrative pronouns are used to point out the person or thing spoken of: *Mon cheval est plus grand que celui-ci* (= my horse is higher than this one).

98. The demonstrative pronouns are the following:

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Ce, celui, celle (= this, that, it).	ceux, celles (= these, those.)

99. We have seen (§ 82) that the adverb ci is added to the demonstrative adjective to point out an object *close to us*, and the adverb là to indicate another object *far from us*. Those two adverbs are also, and for the same purpose, joined to the demonstrative pronouns **ce** (but without a hyphen): **ceci** (= this); **cela** (= that); **celui** (with a hyphen) = **celui-ci**, **celle-ci**, **celui-là**, **celle-là**; **ceux-ci**, **ceux-là**, etc.

100. Ce is a pronoun—

1. When it accompanies a verb: **Ce** doit être son frère (=it must be his brother); *est-ce* lui? (=is it he?).
2. When it is placed before the pronouns *qui* (=who), *que* (=whom), *quoi* (=what), *dont* (=whose): *J'irai voir ce qui est arrivé* (=I will go and see what has happened); *je ferai ce que vous me demandez* (=I will do what you ask me).

But placed before a noun **ce** is an adjective: **Ce** livre (=this book); **ce** chapeau (=that hat).

Celui qui = he who, the one who; *celui que* = he whom, the one whom.

Exercise 21.

1. Mon livre et celui de mon frère.
2. Ma chaise et celle de ma cousine.
3. Ses crayons et ceux de Guillaume.
4. Vos offres et celles de votre ami.
5. Préférez-vous ce couteau-ci ou celui-là?
6. Gardez ces bottes-là; je choisis celles-ci.
7. Ceci mérite attention.
8. Cela ne vaut rien.
9. Quel est ce monsieur?
10. Est-ce bien lui?

¹ préfère, ² qui faites, ³ commode, ⁴ mais, ⁵ ne vaut rien, ⁶ paire (/), ⁷ choisis, ⁸ parce que ce doit être, ⁹ ouvrage (m.), ¹⁰ récompense (/).

1. I prefer¹ these boots to those.
2. Is it you who make² these offers?
3. Give me this or that.
4. Your chairs are not so comfortable³ as those of your friend.
5. These knives are excellent, but⁴ this one is good for nothing.⁵
6. Of several pairs⁶ of boots, this one or that one? these or those?
7. I choose⁷ this book, because it must be⁸ an excellent work.⁹
8. Your brother's attention deserves a reward.¹⁰
9. I do not like that.
10. The one that I show you.

SECTION III.**POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.**

101. Possessive pronouns take the place of the noun, and at the same time denote possession: *Mon chapeau est meilleur que le vôtre* (=my hat is better

than yours); *ton cheval est plus noir que le sien* (=thy horse is blacker than his). **Le vôtre, le sien** are possessive pronouns—*pronouns*, because they are used to avoid the repetition of the noun which represents the object, and *possessive*, because they indicate, at the same time, to whom the object belongs.

When one object possessed by **only one** person is spoken of (as *mon chapeau est meilleur que le tien*), the possessive pronouns are:

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.	
1ST PERSON	{ MASC. le mien ... FEM. la mienne ...	{ les miens ... les miennes ...	} mine
2ND PERSON	{ MASC. le tien ... FEM. la tienne ...	{ les tiens ... les tiennes ...	} thine
3RD PERSON	{ MASC. le sien ... FEM. la sienne ...	{ les siens ... les siennes ...	} his, its hers, its.

Mien, tien, sien are softened forms of *mon, ton, son*. In the Middle-Ages the pronouns *mien, tien, sien* could be used as adjectives, that is to say, placed between the article and the name of the possessed object; people said indiscriminately either *mon frère* (=my brother), *ton vassal* (=thy vassal), or *le mien frère*, *le tien vassal*, etc. This rule soon disappeared, but some remains of it are still found in the modern expressions: *un mien cousin* (=a cousin of mine), *le tien propre*. (=thine own), *une sienne tante* (=an aunt of his), etc.

When an object possessed by **several** persons at the same time is spoken of (as *leur cheval est moins beau que le nôtre* =their horse is not so fine as ours), the possessive pronouns are:

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1ST PERSON	{ MASC. le nôtre ... FEM. la nôtre ...	{ les nôtres =OURS
2ND PERSON	{ MASC. le vôtre ... FEM. la vôtre ...	{ les vôtres ...
3RD PERSON	{ MASC. le leur ... FEM. la leur ...	{ les leurs ...

Exercise 22.

1. Votre fusil est plus lourd que le mien. 2. J'aime votre maison, mais je n'aime pas la leur. 3. Est-il à ma place? La sienne? 4. Voici mes patins; montrez-moi les vôtres. 5. Montre-moi un morceau de ton gâteau, le mien n'est pas encore mangé.

6. Quels jolis enfants! Sont-ce les vôtres? 7. Le domestique m'a apporté mes lettres et les leurs. 8. Il a parlé à mon colonel et au sien. 9. Je vois souvent vos amis et les siens. 10. Je trouve mon pays meilleur que le vôtre.

¹ domestique (m.), ² n'est pas encore arrivé, ³ canif (m.), ⁴ pays (m.), ⁵ Angle terre (f.), ⁶ confiance (f.), ⁷ joli, ⁸ étang (m.).

1. Your servant¹ is here, but mine has not arrived yet.² 2. My colonel's gun is heavier than yours. 3. Is that your pen-knife³? No; it is his. 4. (The) France is my country⁴; (the) England⁵ is yours. 5. My friend deserves your confidence⁶ and theirs. 6. His skates and thine. 7. He speaks to your pretty⁷ children and to mine. 8. Your gloves and hers. 9. This pond⁸ is smaller than ours. 10. I have read your book and his.

SECTION IV.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

102. Relative pronouns are those which connect the noun or pronoun they stand for with the part of the sentence which follows them: *Le chêne qui ombrage notre cour est très-vieux* (=the oak which over-shades our yard is very old); *le livre que vous m'avez prêté est intéressant* (=the book [which] you have lent me is interesting).

103. The word represented by the relative pronoun is called the **antecedent**. In the above examples *chêne* and *livre* are the antecedents of *qui* and of *que*.

The French word *antécédent* comes from the Latin *antecedentem* (=preceding), because it is placed before the relative pronoun.

104. The relative pronouns are—

1. **qui** = who, which (applied to persons and things);
 de qui = whose, of or from whom } applied to
 à qui = to whom } persons only;
2. **quo**¹ = whom, which, what (persons and things);
3. **quoi** = what (things only) in exclamation and after prepositions;
4. **dont** = whose, of or from whom or which (persons and things);
5. **lequel** = who, which, what (persons and things).

¹ *Que* is spelt *qu'* before a vowel; *qui* is never shortened.

The relative pronouns *qui*, *que*, *quoi*, *dont* are **invariable**, but *lequel* is **variable** :—

SINGULAR.

MASC.	FEM.
<i>lequel</i>	<i>laquelle</i> = who, which, what
<i>duquel</i>	<i>de laquelle</i> = of or from whom, which, what
<i>auquel</i>	<i>à laquelle</i> = to whom, which, what.

PLURAL.

<i>lesquels</i>	<i>lesquelles</i> = who, which, what
<i>desquels</i>	<i>desquelles</i> = of whom, which, what
<i>auxquels</i>	<i>auxquelles</i> = to whom, which, what.

105. REMARK.—**Que**, pronoun, must not be mistaken for *que* adverb or *que* conjunction. *Que* is a pronoun when *lequel*, *laquelle*, *lesquels*, *lesquelles* can be used in its place, as: *la rose que j'ai cueillie ce matin est fanée* (=the rose I gathered this morning is faded) = *laquelle j'ai cueillie*.—*Que* is an adverb when it means *how many*, as: *que de belles roses j'ai cueillies!* (=how many beautiful roses I have plucked!) And, lastly, *que* is a conjunction when it means *neither lequel nor combien*, as: *J'espère que vous réussirez dans votre entreprise* (= I hope [that] you will succeed in your undertaking).

NOTE that the relative pronouns are often understood in English, but must always be expressed in French.

106. The relative pronouns are also used in interrogative sentences, in which case they are called **interrogative pronouns**: *Qui êtes-vous?* (= who are you?) *que demandez-vous?* (= what do you ask for?) *à quoi cela est-il bon?* (= what is the use of that?) *voici deux accusés, lequel est coupable?* (= here are two accused persons, which is the guilty one?).

REMARK.—Interrogative pronouns *have no antecedent*.

Dont is never used as an interrogative pronoun: *De qui (not dont) parlez-vous?* (= whom are you speaking of?).

107. Besides the interrogative pronouns proper, there is the **interrogative adjective** *quel*, which

preceded a noun or pronoun: **Quel âge avez-vous?** (= what is your age, or how old are you?) **quelle heure est-il?** (= what o'clock is it?) *j'ai des nouvelles à vous apprendre.*—**Quelles sont-elles?** (= I have some news to tell you.—What is it?).

108. Quel is variable:—

masc. sing. *quel*
fem. sing. *quelle*

masc. plur. *quels*
fem. plur. *quelles*

Exercice 23.

1. La personne qui vous connaît. 2. Le marchand que vous avez vu. 3. La bataille dont je parle. 4. En quoi vous ai-je trompé? 5. L'affaire à laquelle il a donné ses soins. 6. Quel âge a cet enfant? 7. De quel vous a-t-il parlé? 8. A quoi vous occupez-vous? 9. La rose que j'ai cueillie. 10. La loi qui est votée.

¹ marchand, ² parlais hier, ³ failli, ⁴ s'applique-t-il, ⁵ causé, ⁶ vaisseau (m.), ⁷ acheté part demain, ⁸ poème (m.), ⁹ tout le monde, ¹⁰ ministre (m.), ¹¹ bonté, ¹² doit, ¹³ tigre (m.), ¹⁴ habitent, ¹⁵ dessin, ¹⁶ consacre, ¹⁷ traité (m.), ¹⁸ lisez, ¹⁹ plein, ²⁰ idée (f.)

1. Have you seen the merchant¹ of whom I spoke yesterday²? 2. In what have you failed³? 3. To what does he apply himself⁴? 4. Which of my fans has he broken⁵? 5. The ship⁶ (which) he has bought sails to-morrow⁷. 6. The poem⁸ of which everybody⁹ speaks is by Victor Hugo. 7. The minister¹⁰ to whose kindness¹¹ he owes¹² his place (f.) 8. The lions (m.) and tigers¹³ which inhabit¹⁴ the desert (m.) 9. (The) drawing¹⁵ is an art (m.) to which I devote¹⁶ myself. 10. The treatise¹⁷ you are reading¹⁸ is full¹⁹ of original ideas.²⁰

SECTION V.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

109. Indefinite pronouns denote persons or things in a general, vague, and indeterminate manner: **Quelqu'un est venu** (= somebody came); **on nous l'a dit** (= some one told us so); **né faites pas de mal à autrui** (= do no harm to others).

The indefinite pronouns are—

autrui = other people, others	quelqu'un = somebody
chacun = every one,	rien = something
on (or l'on) = people, one, they	rien ne = nothing
personne = somebody	l'un l'autre = one another
personne ne = nobody	l'un et l'autre = both
quiconque = whoever	l'un ou l'autre = either
	ni l'un ni l'autre = neither

110. Personne (from Latin *persona*) is a **pronoun** (and of the *masculine* gender) when it is not accompanied by an article or adjective, as: **Personne n'est venu** (= no one came); **personne a-t-il jamais parlé comme vous?** (= has any one ever spoken like you?). In all other cases **personne** is a **feminine substantive**: **Cette personne est très-obligée** (= this person [either man or woman] is very obliging).

2. Rien is a **pronoun** when not accompanied by an article or an adjective: **Je n'ai rien vu** (= I have not seen anything). Otherwise, it is a **masculine noun**: **Un songe, un rien, tout lui fait peur** (= a dream, a trifle, everything frightens him). (*La Fontaine, Fables*, viii. 11.)

111. Some indefinite adjectives may be used by themselves, *i.e.* without being placed before a substantive, and are therefore considered as **indefinite pronouns**. Such are **nul**, **plusieurs**, **tout**: **Nul n'est irréprochable** (= no one is blameless); **plusieurs ont pleuré** (= several shed tears); **tout est perdu** (= all [everything] is lost), etc.

The following adjectives may be used as pronouns: **autre**, **certain**, **nul**, **plusieurs**, **tel**, **tout**.

REMARK.—**Certain** is an **indefinite pronoun** in the plural when it means *quelques-uns* (= some persons), as: **Certains l'affirment** (= some persons affirm this).

In answers, **rien** and **personne** do not require the *ne*: **Qu'avez-vous vu? rien** (= what have you seen? nothing).

Exercice 24.

1. Quelqu'un est venu vous voir. 2. Ne dites jamais du mal d'autrui. 3. Chacun pense que la guerre sera déclarée. 4. Quiconque ouvrira cette porte, sera puni. 5. On dit qu'un incendie a détruit le palais du roi. 6. Ils se sont mordus l'un l'autre. 7. Je n'ai rien entendu. 8. Voici deux bons fouets, prenez l'un ou l'autre. 9. J'aime l'un et l'autre. 10. Chacun a fait son devoir.

¹ bonheur (m.), ² rend, ³ heureux, ⁴ toujours gai, ⁵ société (f.), ⁶ se calomnie, ⁷ porte (f.), ⁸ fermé, ⁹ plat, ¹⁰ coûté plusieurs, ¹¹ mordu, ¹² pauvre, ¹³ sévèrement, ¹⁴ erreur (f.), ¹⁵ il y avait, ¹⁶ qu'y avait-il.

1. The happiness¹ of others makes² me happy.³ 2. One is always merry⁴ in your society.⁵ 3. They calumniate⁶ one another. 4. Either of these doors⁷ shall be closed.⁸ 5. Neither of these tips pleases⁹ me. 6. Each one of these palaces has cost several¹⁰ millions. 7. Whoever has bitten¹¹ that poor¹² child shall be severely¹³ punished. 8. I have seen nothing of the fire. 9. Each one has his opinion. 10. No one is exempt from error.¹⁴ 11. There was¹⁵ nobody; what was there?¹⁶ Nothing; there was nothing.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. Define a *pronoun*.
2. What is the rule for the agreement of pronouns?
3. How many kinds of pronouns are there?
4. Define a *personal pronoun*.
5. Give a list of the personal pronouns, and say where you place the conjunctive; and where the disjunctive?
6. When is *vous* used instead of *tu*?
7. State the difference between, *le, la, les*, articles, and *le, la, les*, pronouns;—between *leur*, adjective, and *leur*, pronoun;—between *en*, pronoun, and *en*, adverb;—between *y*, pronoun, and *y*, adverb.
8. Mention a *compound pronoun*.
9. Give a table of the demonstrative pronouns.
10. When is *ce* a pronoun?—When is it an adjective?
11. Give a list of the *possessive* pronouns.
12. What is meant by a *relative* pronoun?
13. What is an *antecedent*?
14. Remark on the word *que*.
15. What are the *interrogative* pronouns?—What is *quel*?
16. What is the difference between *qui* and *que*, 1° as relative, 2° as interrogative pronouns?
17. Write a table of the *indefinite* pronouns.
18. Remark on *personne*;—on *rien*.
19. Name the indefinite adjectives used as pronouns.

beginning

CHAPTER V.

OF THE VERB.

112. The **verb** is a word which expresses the idea of an *action* or of a *state* which can be ascribed to a person or to a thing: *Le cheval est docile* (=the horse is docile); *le loup mange l'agneau* (=the wolf eats the lamb).

113. When we say, *le loup mange l'agneau*, the word *mange* (=eats), which indicates the action performed by the wolf, is called the **verb**; the word *loup* (=wolf), indicating the animal which performs the action, is called the **subject**; the word *agneau* (=lamb), pointing out the animal eaten by the wolf, is called the **complement** (or **object**).

114. The word *agneau* (=lamb) is called the **complement** (or **object**) because it *completes* the idea which the verb *mange* (=eats) commences, by indicating what animal the wolf is eating. There are two kinds of complements: the **direct** and the **indirect**.

115. The **direct complement** is that which completes the meaning of the verb in a *direct* manner, that is to say, without the aid of any other word: *il aime son père* (=he loves his father). *Son père* is a direct complement.

116. The **indirect complement** is that which completes *indirectly* the meaning of the verb, that is to say, with the aid of certain words, such as *à*, *de*, etc. (=to, of, etc.), which are called **prepositions**: *il obéit à son père*, *il dépend de son père* (=he obeys his father, he depends on his father), *à son père*, *de son père* are indirect complements.

There is only one verb properly so called, namely the verb *être*, which expresses existence, and is designated as *substantive verb*; all the other verbs are called *adjective verbs*, because, in addition to the idea of existence, they also describe a *quality*, a manner of being of the subject: thus, *je dors* (=I sleep) is the same as *je suis* (=I am, denoting existence) *dormant* (=sleeping, denoting the quality, the manner of being).

117. In studying verbs, we must examine *the stem, the termination, the number, the person, the mood, the tense.* X

1. Stem.—2. Termination.

118. The verb is always formed of two distinct parts: 1st. A part which does not change, called the **stem** (or **root**) of the verb. 2nd. A changeable and variable part, which is called the **termination**. Thus in *je marche, nous marchons, vous marcherez* (=I walk, we walk, you will walk), the stem *march* expresses the action of walking; and the syllables *e, ons, erez*, which follow the stem and mark the different shades of the meaning, are the terminations.

3. Numbers.

119. Verbs, like nouns, have two **numbers**: the singular, relating to one person and thing alone: *je marche, tu lis, il mange* (=I walk, thou readest, he eats); the plural, when several are alluded to: *nous lisons, vous marchez, ils finissent* (=we read, you walk, they finish).

4. Persons.

120. The action expressed by the verb can be performed by the person who speaks: *je marche, nous mangeons* (=I walk, we eat); by the person to whom we speak: *tu marches, vous mangez* (=thou walkest, you eat), or by the person of whom we speak: *il lit, ils marchent* (=he reads, they walk). The French language marks these changes of persons, both in the singular and in the plural, by adding for each of them a new termination (*e, ons, ez*, etc.) to the stem of the verb. These different terminations are called in grammar the **persons** of the verb.

5. Moods.

X **121.** The **mood** is the *manner* in which the verb presents the state or action which it expresses.

Mood (= mood) is from the Latin *modus* (*manière*=manner).

There are in French five *moods*: the **indicative**, the **imperative**, the **conditional**, the **subjunctive**, and the **infinitive**.

1. The **indicative** mood merely *indicates* that the action takes place: *je marche, tu lis* (=I walk, thou readest).

2. The **imperative** mood expresses *command*: *marchez, lisons* (=walk, let us read).

3. The **conditional** mood shows that the action would take place, if a certain condition were fulfilled: *je sortirais, s'il faisait beau* (=I should go out, if the weather were fine).

4. The **subjunctive** mood presents the action in a doubtful and uncertain manner, because it always depends upon another action: *je veux que tu viennes* (=I wish you to come). *Que tu viennes* is governed by the verb *je veux*, and depends on it.

5. The **infinitive** mood presents the action simply in a vague, *indefinite* manner, without any distinction of number or person: *lire, faire, remplir* (=to read, to do, to fill).

REMARK.—The *infinitive mood*, which takes no notice of persons, is called the *impersonal mood*; the other moods, which indicate the persons, are called *personal moods*.

6. Tenses.

122. The *tense* is the form assumed by the verb to show at what *time*, at what *moment* the action alluded to takes place.

There are three principal tenses: the **past**, the **present**, the **future**.

123. The **present** shows that the action occurs at the time when we are speaking (as, *je lis*=I read); the **past** shows that the action is already performed at the time when we are speaking (as, *j'ai marché*=I have walked); the **future** shows that the action will be performed at some future time (as, *je marcherai*=I shall walk).

124. There is only one *present*, but there are several *past* and several *future* tenses, because every action can be more or less past, more or less future.

125. There are five kinds of *past or perfect* tenses: the *imperfect*, the *preterite* or *past definite*, the *past indefinite*, the *past anterior*, and the *pluperfect*.

1. The **imperfect** expresses an action actually performed, but which was not so, when another action took place: *il lisait lorsque j'entrai* (=he was reading when I came in).

It is also used when speaking of a state or action which was habitual or characteristic: *il venait tous les jours* (=he came [used to come] every day).

2. The **preterite** or **past definite** shows that a thing has been done at a *definite*, determined epoch, which has completely passed at the time when we are speaking: *je chantai hier toute la soirée* (=I sang all last evening).

3. The **past indefinite** expresses an action which has taken place at a *vague*, indefinite epoch: *j'ai lu ce livre autrefois* (=I have read that book formerly).

4. The **pluperfect** (*j'avais lu quand vous êtes entré* = I had read when you entered) is thus called because it doubly expresses the past, by marking that a certain thing was done before another one took place in a past time.

5. The **preterite anterior** marks that the circumstance occurred immediately *before* another one which took place in a past time: *quand j'eus lu ce journal, je sortis* (=as soon as I had read that newspaper, I went out).

126. There are two kinds of *future*: the *future simple*, and the *future anterior*.

1. The **future simple** indicates that the thing in question shall be, or shall take place: *je chanterai demain* (=I shall sing to-morrow).

2. The **future anterior** indicates that the thing in question will take place before another one: *quand j'aurai lu ce journal, je sortirai* (=when I have read that newspaper, I shall go out).

AUXILIARY VERBS.

127. The verbs *avoir* and *être* are called **auxiliary verbs**, because they help in the conjugation of others: *je suis venu* (=I have come), *j'ai dormi* (=I have slept),

128. Simple tenses are those which are conjugated without the auxiliary *avoir* or *être*: *j'aime*, *j'aimais*, *que j'aime* (=I love, I loved, that I may love).

The simple tenses are formed by merely adding a termination to the stem.

129. Compound tenses are those which are conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir* or *être*: *j'ai aimé*, *j'aurai aimé*, *que j'eusse aimé* (=I have loved, I shall have loved, that I might have loved).

Conjugation.

130. The union of all the tenses of the same verb, with all their numbers and all their persons, is called its **conjugation**.

131. There are in French **four** conjugations, which are distinguished by the termination of the infinitive.

The infinitive of the **first** conjugation ends in **-er**, as *aimer* (=to love).

The **second** conjugation has **-ir** for the termination of the infinitive, as *finir* (=to finish); and the imperfect of the indicative ends in **iss-ais**, *je fin-iss-ais* (=I finished).

The verbs in **ir** really include two conjugations: the one, as *finir*, the imperfect of which ends in *issais*, as *je finissais*: the other, as *sentir* (=to feel), the imperfect of which ends in *-ais*, as *je sentais*. We give here the first of these conjugations, which includes more than three hundred French verbs, reserving for the chapter on irregular verbs the notice of the second conjugation in **-ir**, which includes only twenty-eight verbs.

The **third** conjugation terminates in the infinitive in **-oir**, as *recevoir* (=to receive).

The **fourth** conjugation has for the ending of the infinitive **-re**, as *rompre* (=to break).

The French language includes (if we take the *Dictionnaire de l'Académie* as an authority) about 4000 simple verbs (leaving out the compound ones); of these, 3000 end in **-er**; 280 in **-ir** (with the imperfect in *-issais*); 23 in **-ir** (with the imperfect in *-ais*); 10 verbs in **-oir**; and 50 verbs in **-re**. We thus see that the first conjugation in **-er** includes in itself nine-tenths of the French verbs.

As we shall see (Section 10) the French language creates new verbs with the help of substantives and adjectives, by adding to the former the termination **-er**: *fête, fêter*; *gant, ganter*; *lard, larder*; *camp, camper* (= holiday, to make holiday; glove, to put gloves on; bacon, to lard; camp, to camp); and to the latter the termination **-ir**: *maigre, maigrir*; *cher, chérir*; *bleu, bleuir*; *pâle, pâlir* (=thin, to become thin; dear, to cherish; blue, to make blue; pale, to become pale).

The first conjugation, in **-er**, forms new verbs with substantives, the second conjugation, in **-ir**, with adjectives. We may, then, designate them as living conjugations (*des conjugaisons vivantes*), inasmuch as they are constantly used for the purpose of new formations.

The conjugations in **-oir, -re** (and the second in **-ir**) are, on the contrary, incapable of being used to form new verbs, and since the origin of their language, the French have not added one single verb in **-oir** or in **-re** to the small number of those bequeathed by the Latin language. These conjugations, which have remained, so to say, barren, can with good reason be called dead conjugations (*des conjugaisons mortes*).

This simple distinction of the conjugations into dead and living shows us at once why 3000 French verbs (out of 4000) are in **-er** and in **-ir**, whilst the three other conjugations put together only include about 90 verbs.

SECTION I.

AUXILIARY VERBS.

132. Avoir and être are auxiliaries only when they serve to conjugate another verb, that is to say, when they are followed by a past participle; they have no claim to that designation when they are conjugated by themselves, as: *j'ai un cheval* (=I have a horse); *je suis roi* (=I am king).

I. Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb AVOIR (=to have).

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

(I have)

J'ai
tu as
il or elle a
nous avons
vous avez
ils or elles ont

PERFECT.

(I have had)

J'ai eu
tu as eu
il or elle a eu
nous avons eu
vous avez eu
ils or elles ont eu.

4-1

IMPERFECT.

(I had)

J'avais
tu avais
il or elle avoit
nous avions
vous aviez
ils or elles avaient

PAST DEFINITE.

(I had)

J'eus
tu eus
il or elle eut
nous eûmes
vous eûtes
ils or elles eurent

FUTURE.

(I shall have)

J'aurai
tu auras
il or elle aura
nous aurons
vous aurez
ils or elles auront

PLUPERFECT.

(I had had)

J'avais eu
tu avais eu
il or elle avoit eu
nous avions eu
vous aviez eu
ils or elles avaient eu.

PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had had)

J'eus eu
tu eus eu
il or elle eut eu
nous eûmes eu
vous eûtes eu
ils or elles eurent eu.

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have had)

J'aurai eu
tu auras eu
il or elle aura eu
nous aurons eu
vous aurez eu
ils or elles auront eu.

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

(I should have)

J'aurais
tu aurais
il or elle aurait
nous aurions
vous auriez
ils or elles auraient

ANTERIOR.

(I should have had)

J'aurais eu
tu aurais eu
il or elle aurait eu
nous aurions eu
vous auriez eu
ils or elles auraient eu.

IMPERATIVE.

PRESENT.

(Have [thou])

Aie
ayons
ayez
•

PERFECT.

(Have [thou] had)

Aie eu
ayons eu
ayez eu
•

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

(That I may have)

Que j'aie
que tu aies
qu'il or qu'elle ait
que nous ayons
que vous ayez
qu'ils or qu'elles aient

IMPERFECT.

(That I might have)

Que j'eusse
que tu eusses
qu'il or qu'elle eût
que nous eussions
que vous eussiez
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent

PERFECT.

(That I may have had)

Que j'aie eu
que tu aies eu
qu'il or qu'elle ait eu
que nous ayons eu
que vous ayez eu
qu'ils or qu'elles aient eu.

PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have had)

Que j'eusse eu
que tu eusses eu
qu'il or qu'elle eût eu
que nous eussions eu
que vous eussiez eu
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent eu.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

Avoir (to have)

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Ayant (having)

PERFECT.

Avoir eu (to have had).

PERFECT.

Ayant eu (having had).

PAST (VARIABLE).

Eu, fem. eue.

Exercice 25.

Indicatif présent.—J'ai un chapeau neuf. Tu as une robe neuve. Nous avons une grande maison. Vous avez de l'ambition. Ils ont un cheval noir.

Imparfait.—J'avais un bon maître. Tu avais une belle bibliothèque. Elle avait une voiture élégante. Nous avions des chagrins. Vous aviez perdu votre temps. Elles avaient des tiroirs pleins de jonets.

Passé défini.—J'eus un grand jardin. Il eut un morceau de pain. Nous eûmes une récompense. Ils eurent de la joie.

Futur.—J'aurai six paires de bas. Tu auras des raisins. Nous aurons des poires délicieuses. Vous aurez trop de plaisir.

Conditionnel présent.—J'aurais un billet pour le convoi de Paris. Elle aurait une robe et un chapeau neuf. Nous aurions un habile jardinier. Ils auraient une récompense.

Impératif.—Aie du courage. Ayons un peu de patience. Ayez plus de persévérance.

Subjonctif présent.—Que j'aie mon déjeuner. Que tu aies tes lettres. Que vous ayez votre fusil chargé.

Imparfait.—Que j'eusse mon épée et mes pistolets. Que tu eusses un grand pouvoir. Qu'elle eût une nombreuse famille. Que nous eussions des embarras. Que vous eussiez des billets de banque. Qu'elles eussent une chambre petite mais propre.

Temps composés.—Mon frère a eu une bonne place. Elle avait eu des oiseaux. J'eus eu des fleurs. J'aurai eu mon argent. Nous aurions eu un été magnifique. Que tu aies eu de la prudence. Qu'elles eussent eu une bouteille de vin.

Infinitif.—Avoir de l'esprit. Ayant eu du succès.

¹ persévérance (f.), ² place (f.), ³ cour (f.), ⁴ poire (f.), ⁵ chapeau (m.), ⁶ comédie (f.), ⁷ choix (m.), ⁸ main (f.), ⁹ laborieux, ¹⁰ congé (m.), ¹¹ éperon (m.), ¹² aiguille (f.), ¹³ boîte (f.) à ouvrage, ¹⁴ loisir (m.), ¹⁵ lorgnon (m.), ¹⁶ consentement (m.), ¹⁷ cause (f.), ¹⁸ théâtre (f.), ¹⁹ rideau (m.), ²⁰ chandelier (m.), ²¹ rhume (m.), ²² citron (m.), ²³ malheur (m.), ²⁴ dîner (m.), ²⁵ verger (m.), ²⁶ inquiétude (f.), ²⁷ manteau (m.), ²⁸ bonheur (m.), ²⁹ écharpe (f.), ³⁰ argent, ³¹ nourriture (f.), ³² couronne (f.).

Indicative present.—(I have a sword and (some) pistols.) Thou hast very little (of) patience (f.). She has prudence (f.). We have more (of) perseverance.¹

Imperfect.—(I had two large gardens.) Thou hadst a bottle of wine. He had a good situation² at (the) court.³ We had some delicious pears.⁴ They had new bonnets.⁵

Perfect.—(She had a pair of stockings.) We had a ticket for the play.⁶ My gardener, who was in the train, had an accident (m.).

Future.—(I shall have lost my time.) You will have an elegant carriage. They will have their reward.

Conditional present.—I should have my choice.⁷ Thou wouldst have a small room. He would have some bank-notes. We should have some difficulty. You would have some new skates. They would have a quire⁸ of paper.

Imperative.—(Have (thou) a more industrious⁹ pupil.) Let us have our holidays.¹⁰ Have (ye) some melons (m.).

Subjunctive present.—(That I may have a pair of spurs.¹¹) That thou may'st have some needles.¹² That she may have a work-box.¹³ That we may have leisure.¹⁴ That you may have more (of) confidence. That they may have eye-glasses.¹⁵

Imperfect.—(That I might have your consent.) That thou mightest have a cup¹⁷ and a tea-pot.¹⁸ That he might have jewels. That she might have curtains¹⁹ in her room. That we might have a candlestick.²⁰ That you might have a cold.²¹ That they might have lemons.²²

Compound tenses. (I have had a misfortune.³⁰ Thou hadst had a good dinner.³⁴ She had had a large orchard.³⁵ We shall have had much (of) anxiety.³⁶ You would have had a cloak.³⁷ That this merchant may have had luck.³⁸ That she might have had a scarf.³⁹

Infinitive. (To have money⁴⁰ is not always to be happy.) Having food.⁴¹ Having had a crown.⁴²

47

II. Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb ÊTRE (=to be).

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

(I am)

Je suis
tu es
il or elle est
nous sommes
vous êtes
ils or elles sont

PERFECT.

(I have been)

J'ai été
tu as été
il or elle a été
nous avons été
vous avez été
ils or elles ont été.

IMPERFECT.

(I was)

J'étais.
tu étais
il or elle était
nous étions
vous étiez
ils or elles étaient

PLUPERFECT.

(I had been)

J'avais été
tu avais été
il or elle avait été
nous avions été
vous aviez été
ils or elles avaient été.

PAST DEFINITE.

(I was)

Je fus
tu fus
il or elle fut
nous fûmes
vous fûtes
ils or elles furent

PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had been)

J'eus été
tu eus été
il or elle eut été
nous eûmes été
vous eûtes été
ils or elles eurent été.

FUTURE.

(I shall be)

Je serai
tu seras
il or elle sera
nous serons
vous serez
ils or elles seront

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have been)

J'aurai été
tu auras été
il or elle aura été
nous aurons été
vous aurez été
ils or elles auront été.

AUXILIARY VERBS.

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

(I should be)

Je serais
tu serais
il or elle serait
nous serions
vous seriez
ils or elles seraient

ANTERIOR.

(I should have been)

J'aurais été
tu aurais été
il or elle aurait été
nous aurions été
vous auriez été
ils or elles auraient été.

IMPERATIVE.

PRESENT.

(Be [thou])

Sois
soyons
soyez
.

PERFECT.

(Have [thou] been)

Aie été
Ayons été
Ayez été
.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

(That I may be)

Que je sois
que tu sois
qu'il or qu'elle soit
que nous soyons
que vous soyez
qu'ils or qu'elles soient

IMPERFECT.

(That I might be)

Que je fusse
que tu fusses
qu'il or qu'elle fût
que nous fussions
que vous fussiez
qu'ils or qu'elles fussent

PERFECT.

(That I may have been)

Que j'aie été
que tu aies été
qu'il or qu'elle ait été
que nous ayons été
que vous ayez été
qu'ils or qu'elles aient été.

PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have been)

Que j'eusse été
que tu eusses été
qu'il or qu'elle eût été
que nous eussions été
que vous eussiez été
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent été.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

Être (to be)

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Étant (being)

PERFECT.

Avoir été (to have been).

PERFECT.

Ayant été (having been).

PAST (INVARIABLE).

Été (been).

Exercice 26.

Indicatif présent.—Je suis malade. Tu es savant. Il est malheureux. Elle est joyeuse. Nous sommes laborieux. Vous êtes modestes. Ils sont oisifs. Elles sont oisives.

Imparfait.—J'étais prudent. Tu étais timide. Il était honteux. Elle était honteuse. Nous étions discretes. Vous étiez studieux. Ils étaient jaloux. Vos sœurs étaient jalouses.

Passé défini.—Je fus son ami intime. Tu fus mon plus grand ennemi. Elle fut excellente musicienne. Nous fûmes généreux. Vous fûtes ingrats. Elles furent cruelles.

Futur.—Je serai général en chef. Il sera mis à mort. Elle sera estimée. Nous serons fidèles à notre pays. Vous serez dans des craintes continuelles. Ils seront inquiets.

Conditionnel présent.—Je serais prêt. Tu serais turbulent. Il serait déshant. Elle serait sûre. Nous serions fermes. Vous seriez frivoles. Ils seraient entêtés. Elles seraient soigneuses. *Ca requiert*

Impératif.—Sois tranquille. Soyez charitables. Soyons amis. Soyez obéissants. Soyons libres. Soyez gaies.

Subjonctif présent.—Que je sois moins impatient. Que tu sois un bon citoyen. Qu'il soit toujours puissant. Qu'elle soit soumise à ses parents. Que nous soyons sobres. Que vous soyez crédules. Qu'ils soient opiniâtres.

Imparfait.—Que je fusse ferme et courageux. Que tu fusses économe. Qu'il fût modéré. Que nous fussions hospitaliers. Que vous fussiez trompés. Qu'elles fussent satisfaites.

Temps composés.—Tu as été trop prompt. Elle avait été prise. Nous eûmes été invités. Vous aurez été moqueurs. Ils auraient été plus généreux. Que j'aie été volé. Qu'elles eussent été précoces.

Infinitif.—Pour être heureux il faut avoir la conscience tranquille. Etant battu, je me retire.

EXERCISE 27. The pupil must be careful to observe here the rules for the place of adjectives; see § 64, Note.

¹ in-dicret, ² obstiné, ³ ridicule, ⁴ capricieux, ⁵ reconnaissant, ⁶ emporté, ⁷ appliqué, ⁸ moqueur, ⁹ sage, ¹⁰ humain, ¹¹ malheureux, ¹² infirme, ¹³ content, ¹⁴ compatissant, ¹⁵ bienveillant, ¹⁶ timide, ¹⁷ enflant, ¹⁸ découragé, ¹⁹ faible, ²⁰ posé, ²¹ battu, ²² prudent à l'avenir, ²³ ennuyeux, ²⁴ soupçonné, ²⁵ conquis, ²⁶ trompé, ²⁷ taché, ²⁸ chagrin, ²⁹ commande, ³⁰ devint, ³¹ ré-

Indicative present.—I am obedient. I am not art ready. He is charitable. She is impatient. We are moderate. You are in continual fears. They are inconsiderate.¹

Imperfect.—(I was a distrustful man.) Thou wast obstinate.⁶ She was firm. We were ridiculous.⁸ You were whimsical.⁴ These soldiers were brave.

Past definite.—I was jealous.¹ Thou wast grateful.⁵ He was studious. We were hasty.⁹ You were attentive. My sisters were diligent.⁷

Future.—I shall be sarcastic.³ Thou wilt be a rich man. She will be a wise woman.¹⁰ We shall be humane.¹⁰ You will be unpolite.¹¹ They will be ridiculous.

Conditional present.—(I should be firm.) Thou wouldst be cruel. She would be infirm.¹² We should be pleased.¹³ You would be discreet. They would be kind.

Imperative.—Be indulgent.² Let us be compassionate.¹⁴ Let us be benevolent.¹⁵

Subjunctive present.—(That I may be very timid.) That thou may'st be excited.¹⁷ That she may be discouraged.¹⁸ That we may be weak.¹⁹ That you may be steady.²⁰ That they may be dumb.

Imperfect.—(That I might be beaten.) That he might be respectable. That he might be cautious for the future.²² That they might be tedious.²³

Compound tenses.—(I have been absent.) Thou hadst been suspected.²⁴ She had been quiet. We shall have been conquered.²⁵ You would have been deceived.²⁶ That I may have been happy. That he might have been killed.²⁷

Infinitive.—(To be sorrowful.) Being the master, I order²⁸ here. Having been deceived, he became²⁹ more reserved.³¹

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. Define the verb, the subject, the direct complement or object, the indirect complement or object.
2. What is the substantive verb? What is meant by an adjective verb?
3. What is the stem? the termination?
4. When is the verb put in the singular? when in the plural?
5. How many persons are there? how many moods?
6. Explain the force of every one of the moods?
7. What is meant by a personal mood?
8. What is an impersonal mood?
9. How many kinds of perfect are there? What is expressed by the imperfect, the past definite, etc.?
10. How many kinds of future are there?
11. Define a simple tense;—a compound tense.
12. Give a list of the French conjugations, and explain how they are distinguished from each other.
13. When are *avoir* and *être* auxiliary verbs?

SECTION II.

ACTIVE VERBS.

133. There are in French five kinds of verbs: the *active* verb, the *neuter* verb, the *passive* verb, the *reflective* verb, and the *impersonal* verb.

134. The *active* verb expresses the action performed by the subject, and is followed by a direct object: *J'aime votre frère* (= I love your brother).

The active verb is also called *transitive* (from the Latin *transire* = to pass over from one place to another), because the action is transmitted from the subject to the object: *Le loup mange l'agneau* (= the wolf eats the lamb), *je récompense cet enfant* (= I reward this child).

135. We now give a model of the four conjugations of French verbs, taking care to point out, by different types, the stem from the termination.

I. First Conjugation.—Verb **AIMER** (=to love).

Stem, *aim*; termination, *er*.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

(I love)

J'aime
tu *aimes*
il or elle *aime*
nous *aimons*
vous *aimez*
ils or elles *aiment*.

IMPERFECT.

(I was loving)

J'aimais
tu *aimais*
il or elle *aimait*
nous *aimions*
vous *aimiez*
ils or elles *aimaient*.

PAST INDEFINITE.

(I have loved)

J'ai aimé
tu *as aimé*
il or elle *a aimé*
nous *avons aimé*
vous *avez aimé*
ils or elles *ont aimé*.

PLUPERFECT.

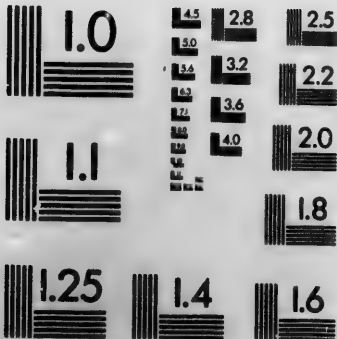
(I had loved)

J'avais aimé
tu *avais aimé*
il or elle *avait aimé*
nous *avions aimé*
vous *aviez aimé*
ils or elles *avaient aimé*.



MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)



APPLIED IMAGE Inc

1653 East Main Street
Rochester, New York 14609 USA
(716) 482-0300 - Phone
(716) 285-5989 - Fax

ACTIVE VERBS.

PAST DEFINITE.

(I loved)

J'aimai
tu aimas
il or elle aim^a
nous aimâmes
vous aimâtes
ils or elles aimèrent.

FUTURE.

(I shall love)

J'aimerai
tu aimeras
il or elle aimera
nous aimerons
vous aimerez
ils or elles aimeront

PRESENT.

(I should love)

J'aimerais
tu aimerais
il or elle aimerait
nous aimerions
vous aimeriez
ils or elles aimeraient

PRESENT.

(Love thou)

Aime
aimons
aimez
.

PRESENT.

(That I may love)

Que j'aime
que tu aimes
qu'il or qu'elle aime
que nous aimions
que vous aimiez
qu'ils or qu'elles aiment

PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had loved)

J'eus aimé
tu eus aimé
il or elle eut aimé
nous eûmes aimé
vous eûtes aimé
ils or elles eurent aimé.

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have loved)

J'aurai aimé
tu auras aimé
il or elle aura aimé
nous aurons aimé
vous aurez aimé
ils or elles auront aimé.

CONDITIONAL.

ANTERIOR.

(I should have loved)

J'aurais or j'eusse aimé
tu aurais or tu eusses aimé
il or elle aurait or eût aimé
nous aurions or eussions aimé
vous auriez or eussiez aimé
ils or elles auraient or eussent aimé.

IMPERATIVE.

PERFECT.

(Have [thou] loved)

Aie aimé
ayons aimé
ayez aimé
.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PERFECT.

(That I may have loved)

Que j'aie aimé
que tu aies aimé
qu'il or qu'elle ait aimé
que nous ayons aimé
que vous ayez aimé
qu'ils or qu'elles aient aimé.

IMPERFECT.

(That I might love)

Que j'aimasse
 que tu aimasses
 qu'il or qu'elle aimât
 que nous aimassions
 que vous aimassiez
 qu'ils or qu'elles aimassent

PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have loved)

Que j'eusse aimé
 que tu eusses aimé
 qu'il or qu'elle eût aimé
 que nous eussions aimé
 que vous eussiez aimé
 qu'ils or qu'elles eussent aimé.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

Aimer (to love)

PERFECT.

Avoir aimé (to have loved).

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Aimant (loving)

PERFECT.

Ayant aimé (having loved).

PAST (VARIABLE).

Aimé, fem. aimée (loved).

Exercise 27.

Indicatif présent.—J'aime mon père. Tu adores Dieu. Il alarme le pays. Elle danse très-bien. Nous apportons de bonnes nouvelles. Vous arrosez le jardin. Ils attaquent l'ennemi.

Imparfait.—Je balayais l'école. Il baignait le lit. Elle brodait sa robe. Nous cachetions la lettre. Vous trouviez votre thème. Ils condamnaient ma conduite.

Passé défini.—Je récompensai le domestique. Tu donnas ta parole. Il disputa la question. Elle consola sa mère. Nous contentâmes notre maître. Vous remarquâtes les fautes. Ils décachetèrent la lettre.

Futur.—Je déciderai la question. Tu tueras un canard. Il déclarera la guerre. Elle déjeunera avec vous. Nous aimerons les bons. Vous détromperez ma sœur. Ils différeront la punition.

Conditionnel présent.—Je fréquenterais la bonne compagnie. Tu dévoilerais le complot. Il graverait ce tableau. Elle humilierait votre orgueil. Nous imprimerions une grammaire. Vous oublieriez mes torts envers vous. Ils réformeraient leurs lois.

Impératif.—Sacrifie ton intérêt au bien public. Débrouillez cette affaire. Terminons ce livre. Apaisez sa colère. Evitons le danger.

Subjonctif présent.—Que je donne ce joujou à votre fils. Que tu blâmes sa conduite. Qu'il propose un avis salutaire. Que nous admirions la beauté de ce paysage. Que vous pensiez à mes malheurs. Qu'ils oublient une circonstance essentielle.

Imparfait.—Que je surmontasse les obstacles. Que tu consolasses les pauvres. Qu'il renforçât le parti. Que nous fermassions

les volets. Que vous racontassiez cette charmante histoire. Qu'ils surveillassent ce méchant homme.

Infinitif.—Trop parler nuit. Il faut avoir traversé le désert.

Participes.—En patinant hier, il s'est cassé la jambe.

Temps composés.—J'ai chanté deux airs. Tu avais montré trop de talent. Il eut fermé la porte. Nous aurons dépensé trois mille francs. Vous auriez passé la journée chez des amis. Que j'aie hésité à vous défendre. Que tu eusses manqué à tous tes devoirs.

¹trouer, ²fortifier, ³débrouiller, ⁴offense (*f.*), ⁵punition (*f.*), ⁶un avis salutaire, ⁷dévoiler, ⁸complot (*m.*), ⁹vertueux, ¹⁰proposer, ¹¹planche (*f.*), ¹²de musée (*m.*), ¹³ote (*f.*), ¹⁴armer, ¹⁵les pauvres, ¹⁶trop, ¹⁷voler, ¹⁸juste, ¹⁹moyen d'être, ²⁰glace (*f.*), ²¹à travers, ²²col (*m.*), ²³surveiller, ²⁴départ (*m.*).

Indicative present.—I speak (the) French. Thou skatest very well. He shows much (of) talent. Our troops¹ strengthen² your party (*m.*). We print a grammar. You unravel³ my affairs (*f.*)

Imperfect.—(I thought of your misfortunes. Thou wast crossing the wilderness.) He related a charming history. We were shutting the shutters (*m.*). You were mending your conduct. He was discussing the question (*f.*).

Past definite.—Your sister sang ye . . . I forgot all your offences.⁴ Thou avoidedst a great danger. We spent more (of) money than you. You forgot your punishment.⁵

Future.—I shall give you some sound advice.⁶ Thou wilt undeceive my sister. He will expose⁷ the plot.⁸ You will frequent the company of (the) virtuous⁹ men. They will propose¹⁰ three questions.

Conditional present.—I would sweep the school. Thou shouldst alarm the camp (*m.*). He would give these toys to my children. We would water their flower-beds¹¹ in the garden. You should love your parents. He should engrave the best pictures in¹² the museum.¹³

Imperative.—Worship God. Let us notice the mistakes in this exercise. Shut your books.

Subjunctive present.—That I may kill a goose.¹⁴ That thou may'st warm the bed. That she may think of us when she is in France. That we may breakfast this morning with our friends. That you may arm¹⁵ all the troops. That you may visit the poor.¹⁶

Imperfect.—(That I might condemn her conduct. That thou mightest satisfy thy kind mother.) That she might scold her servants. That we might spend too much.¹⁷ That you might steal¹⁸ my letter. That they might weep.

Infinitive. (To sing in tune¹⁹ is an essential quality. To have confessed one's faults is the best means of being²⁰ pardoned.)

Participles. (I have seen you breaking the ice²¹ in the garden. Passing through²² the camp.)

Compound tenses. (I have avoided this wicked man. Thou hadst embroidered my collar.²³) He had watched over²⁴ that child. We shall have dined. You would have postponed your departure.²⁵ That they may have observed all the circumstances. That I might have admired the landscape.

II. Second Conjugation.—Verb **FINIR** (=to finish).

Stem, **fin**; termination, **ir**.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

(*I finish*)

Je **finis**
tu **finis**
il or elle **finit**
nous **finissons**
vous **finissez**
ils or elles **finissent**

IMPERFECT.

(*I was finishing*)

Je **finissais**
tu **finissais**
il or elle **finissait**
nous **finissions**
vous **finissiez**
ils or elles **finissaient**

FAST DEFINITE.

(*I finished*)

Je **finis**
tu **finis**
il or elle **finit**
nous **finîmes**
vous **finîtes**
ils or elles **finirent**

FUTURE.

(*I shall finish*)

Je **finirai**
tu **finiras**
il or elle **finira**
nous **finirons**
vous **finirez**
ils or elles **finiront**

PAST INDEFINITE.

(*I have finished*)

J'**ai fini**
tu **as fini**
il or elle **a fini**
nous **avons fini**
vous **avez fini**
ils or elles **ont fini**

PLUPERFECT.

(*I had finished*)

J'**avais fini**
tu **avais fini**
il or elle **avait fini**
nous **avions fini**
vous **aviez fini**
ils or elles **avaient fini**

PAST ANTERIOR.

(*I had finished*)

J'**eus fini**
tu **eus fini**
il or elle **eut fini**
nous **eûmes fini**
vous **eûtes fini**
ils or elles **eurent fini**

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(*I shall have finished*)

J'**aurai fini**
tu **auras fini**
il or elle **aura fini**
nous **aurons fini**
vous **aurez fini**
ils or elles **auront fini**

ACTIVE VERBS.

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

(I should finish)

Je fin**irais**
 tu fin**irais**
 il or elle fin**irait**
 nous fin**irions**
 vous fin**iriez**
 ils or elles fin**iraient**

44

PRESENT.

(Finish [thou])

Fin**is**
 fin**issons**
 fin**issez**

ANTERIOR.

(I should have finished)

J'aurais or j'eusse fin**i**
 tu aurais or tu eusses fin**i**
 il or elle aurait or eût fin**i**
 nous aurions or eussions fin**i**
 vous auriez or eussiez fin**i**
 ils or elles auraient or eussent fin**i**

IMPERATIVE.

PERFECT.

(Have [thou] finished)

Aie fin**i**
 ayons fin**i**
 ayez fin**i**

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

(That I may finish)

Que je fin**isse**
 que tu fin**isses**
 qu'il or qu'elle fin**isse**
 que nous fin**issions**
 que vous fin**issiez**
 qu'ils or qu'elles fin**issent**

IMPERFECT.

(That I might finish)

Que je fin**is**
 que tu fin**isses**
 qu'il or qu'elle fin**it**
 que nous fin**issions**
 que vous fin**issiez**
 qu'ils or qu'elles fin**issent**

PERFECT.

(That I may have finished)

Que j'aie fin**i**
 que tu aies fin**i**
 qu'il or qu'elle ait fin**i**
 que nous ayons fin**i**
 que vous ayez fin**i**
 qu'ils or qu'elles aient fin**i**

PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have finished)

Que j'eusse fin**i**
 que tu eusses fin**i**
 qu'il or qu'elle eût fin**i**
 que nous eussions fin**i**
 que vous eussiez fin**i**
 qu'ils or qu'elles eussent fin**i**

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

Finir *(to finish)*

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Finissant *(finishing)*

PERFECT.

Avoir fin**i** *(to have finished)*.

PERFECT.

Ayant fin**i** *(having finished)*.

PAST (VARIABLE).

Fin**i**, fem. fin**ie** *(finished)*.

2574

Exercice 28.

Indicatif présent.—Je punis les coupables. Il adoucit le cœur. Vous applaudit à ce qu'il dit.

Imparfait.—J'avertissais votre frère de son danger. Nous bannissions les méchants de notre société.

Passé défini.—Tu réussis dans ton entreprise. Vous désobéîtes à votre maître. Ils envahirent le pays.

Futur.—Je finirai mon ouvrage ce soir. Il garnira cette chambre de tableaux. Nous jouirons des plaisirs de la campagne.

Conditionnel présent.—Tu trahirais mes intérêts. Nous enrichirions notre famille. Elles compâtraient à nos malheurs.

Impératif.—Polis ces ouillers. Attendez-vous ce cœur inflexible.

Subjonctif présent.—Que j'établisse ma réputation. Qu'il affaiblisse son parti. Que vous renchérissez ces marchandises.

Imparfait.—Que tu les affermisses dans leur devoir. Que nous abolissions ces impôts. Qu'ils asservissent les nations étrangères.

Infinitif.—Je puis fournir ce travail. Avoir assorti ces couleurs.

Participes.—En punissant les coupables, j'ai rempli un véritable devoir.

Temps composés.—Tu as appravi ces enfants. Ce cheval avait henni. Vous auriez accompli cette tâche.

¹ chérir, ² droits (m.), ³ acclété (f.), ⁴ répartir, ⁵ fléchir, ⁶ coup (m.), ⁷ tailler (m.), ⁸ étonner, ⁹ fournir, ¹⁰ de charbon, ¹¹ rôti, ¹² gigot (m.), ¹³ Espagne (f.), ¹⁴ aplanir, ¹⁵ répartir, ¹⁶ paroisse (f.), ¹⁷ échelle (f.), ¹⁸ chagrin (m.), ¹⁹ accomplir, ²⁰ subir, ²¹ approfondir, ²² tiroir, ²³ musique (f.).

Indicative present.—(Thou cherishest¹ thy parents. We abolish the duties² on those goods.) You strengthen them in their duty.

Imperfect.—(I finished this book. She enjoyed the pleasures of (the) society.³) We distributed⁴ the provisions (f.).

Past definite.—(He bent⁵ under the blow.⁶ The thunder⁷ resounded.) You supplied⁹ our house with coal.¹⁰

Future.—(Thou wilt betray the party. We shall roast¹¹ a leg¹² of mutton.) They will invade (the) Spain.¹³

Conditional present.—(I would smoothen¹⁴ the difficulties. He would assess¹⁵ the taxes of the parish.¹⁶) They would establish their reputation.

Imperative.—(Polish all the forks. Strengthen this ladder.¹⁷)

Subjunctive present.—(That thou mayest enslave the nation. That we may soften his grief.¹⁸) That the fruit may rise in price.

Imperfect.—(That I might discharge¹⁹ my duty. That she might undergo²⁰ the punishment.) That you might unfurnish the room.

Infinitive. (To finish this book before a month is impossible.)
Participles. (By examining into²¹ this question, you will find that the laws have been established.)
Compound tenses. (I have filled these drawers.²² We shall have applauded that beautiful music.²³) That he might have been warned.

III. Third Conjugation.—Verb **RECEVOIR** (=to receive).

Stem, recev; termination, oir.

4144

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

(I receive)

Je reçois
 tu reçois
 il or elle reçoit
 nous recevons
 vous recevez
 ils or elles reçoivent

PERFECT.

(I have received)

J'ai reçu
 tu as reçu
 il or elle a reçu
 nous avons reçu
 vous avez reçu
 ils or elles ont reçu.

IMPERFECT.

(I was receiving)

Je recevais
 tu recevais
 il or elle recevait
 nous recevions
 vous receviez
 ils or elles recevaient

PLUPERFECT.

(I had received)

J'avais reçu
 tu avais reçu
 il or elle avait reçu
 nous avions reçu
 vous aviez reçu
 ils or elles avaient reçu.

PAST DEFINITE.

(I received)

Je reçus
 tu reçus
 il or elle reçut
 nous reçûmes
 vous reçûtes
 ils or elles reçurent

PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had received)

J'eus reçu
 tu eus reçu
 il or elle eut reçu
 nous eûmes reçu
 vous eûtes reçu
 ils or elles eurent reçu.

FUTURE.

(I shall receive)

Je recevrai
 tu recevras
 il or elle recevra
 nous recevrons
 vous recevrez
 ils or elles recevront

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have received)

J'aurai reçu
 tu auras reçu
 il or elle aura reçu
 nous aurons reçu
 vous aurez reçu
 ils or elles auront reçu.

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

(I should receive)

Je recevrais
tu recevrais
il or elle recevrait
nous recevriions
vous recevriez
ils or elles recevraient

ANTERIOR.

(I should have received)

J'aurais or j'eusse reçu
tu aurais or tu eusses reçu
il or elle aurait or eût reçu
nous aurions or eussions reçu
vous auriez or eussiez reçu
ils or elles auraient or eussent
reçu.

IMPERATIVE.

PRESENT.

(Receive [thou])

Reçois
recevons
recevez

PERFECT.

(Have [thou] received)

Aie reçu
ayons reçu
ayez reçu

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

(That I may receive)

Que je reçoive
que tu reçoives
qu'il or qu'elle reçoive
que nous recevions
que vous receviez
qu'ils or qu'elles reçoivent

PERFECT.

(That I may have received)

Que j'aie reçu
que tu aies reçu
qu'il or qu'elle ait reçu
que nous ayons reçu
que vous ayez reçu
qu'ils or qu'elles aient reçu.

IMPERFECT.

(That I might receive)

Que je reçusse
que tu reçusses
qu'il or qu'elle reçût
que nous reçussions
que vous reçussiez
qu'ils or qu'elles reçussent

PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have received)

Que j'eusse reçu
que tu eusses reçu
qu'il or qu'elle eût reçu
que nous eussions reçu
que vous eussiez reçu
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent reçu.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

Recevoir *(to receive)*

PERFECT.

Avoir reçu *(to have received)*.

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Recevant *(receiving)*

PERFECT.

Ayant reçu *(having received)*.

PAST (VARIABLE).

Reçu, sem. reçue *(received)*.

Exercice 29.

Indicatif présent.—Je conçois comment cela est arrivé. Il aperçoit votre intention. Nous redonnons le loyer de notre maison.

Imparfait.—Tu recevais tes livres. Vous déceviez ses espérances. Ils percevaient mes revenus. *income*

Passé défini.—Je reçus une visite de votre oncle. Elle conçut un grand projet. Nous aperçûmes le voleur. *thief*

Futur.—Tu recevras demain une lettre de mon ami. Vous concevrez un nouveau projet. Ils apercevront aisément si le thème est bien fait. *arranged*

Conditionnel présent.—Il recevrait les arrérages. Je devrais écrire ce devoir. Vous apercevriez son erreur.

Impératif.—Conçois l'importance de cette affaire. Recevez mes remerciements de toutes vos bontés.

Subjonctif présent.—Qu'il perçoive l'intérêt de cet argent. Que nous recevions son télégramme. Qu'elles redoivent le montant du billet. *one shilling*

Imparfait.—Que je redusse une bagatelle. Que vous décuissiez mes plus chères espérances. Que nous reçussions ce tribut d'estime. *trifle*

Infinitif.—Apercevoir des défauts dans autrui est chose facile.

Participes.—En recevant cette demande, le roi a fait un acte de justice. Les impôts sont perçus. *charge collected*

Temps composés.—Je l'ai reçu hier. Il a aperçu mon frère. Vous auriez aperçu le clocher de l'église. Que tu eusses conçu l'étendue de ses projets. *perception*

Exercice

'gouvernement (m.), 'profondeur (f.), 'trahison (f.), 'orgueil (f.),
'politesses (f.), 'dessin (m.), 'bouquet (m.), 'tout à fait, 'désirer, 'montrer,
'juste, 'mériter, 'billet (m.), 'tache (f.), 'drap (m.).

Indicative present.—(I perceive your mistake. You collect the taxes for the government.) They receive a tribute (in) money.

Imperfect.—(He perceived his situation. We owed again a sum of seventy francs.) They deceived my fondest hopes.

Past definite.—(I conceived the depth of his treachery.) You received a cargo of goods. We perceived the steeple of the church.

Future.—(Thou wilt owe many (of) thanks to thy friend. She will receive your message (m).) They will conceive a plan (m).

Conditional present.—(I should receive him with politeness.) Thou wouldst receive a telegram. We should perceive the house.

Imperative.—Receive my sincere thanks. Let us conceive a better design.

Subjunctive present. (That we may receive the nosegay.⁷ That he may collect the arrears.) That they may owe less.

Imperfect. (That I might understand my lesson thoroughly.⁸ I wished⁹ that you might perceive your danger.) That we might conceive the importance of his duties.

Infinitive. (To receive this man is to show¹⁰ one's contempt of what is right.¹¹)

Participles. (In deceiving me you have deserved¹² to be punished.)

Compound Tenses. (I had received your note.¹³ She had perceived his intentions.) That I might have perceived a stain¹⁴ on that cloth.¹⁵

IV. Fourth Conjugation.—Verb **ROMPRE** (= to break).

Stem, **romp**; termination, **re**.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

(I break)

Je romps
tu romps
il or elle rompt
nous rompons
vous rompez
ils or elles rompent

IMPERFECT.

(I was breaking)

Je rompais
tu rompais
il or elle rompait
nous rompiions
vous rompiez
ils or elles rompaient

PAST DEFINITE.

(I broke)

Je rompis
tu rompis
il or elle rompit
nous rompîmes
vous rompîtes
ils or elles rompirent

PERFECT.

(I have broken)

J'ai rompu
tu as rompu
il or elle a rompu
nous avons rompu
vous avez rompu
ils or elles ont rompu.

PLUPERFECT.

(I had broken)

J'avais rompu
tu avais rompu
il or elle avait rompu
nous avions rompu
vous aviez rompu
ils or elles avaient rompu.

PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had broken)

J'eus rompu
tu eus rompu
il or elle eut rompu
nous eûmes rompu
vous eûtes rompu
ils or elles eurent rompu.

ACTIVE VERBS.

FUTURE.

(I shall break)

Je romprai
tu rompras
il or elle rompra
nous romprons
vous romprez
ils or elles rompront

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have broken)

J'aurai rompu
tu auras rompu
il or elle aura rompu
nous aurons rompu
vous aurez rompu
ils or elles auront rompu.

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

(I should break)

Je romprais
tu romprais
il or elle romprait
nous romprions
vous romtriez
ils or rompraient

ANTERIOR.

(I should have broken)

J'aurais or j'eusse rompu
tu aurais or tu eusses rompu
il or elle aurait or eût rompu
nous aurions or eussions rompu
vous auriez or eussiez rompu
ils or elles auraient or eussent rompu.

IMPERATIVE.

PRESENT.

(Break [thou])

Romps
rompons
rompez

PERFECT.

(Have [thou] broken)

Aie rompu
ayons rompu
ayez rompu

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

(That I may break)

Que je rompe
que tu rompes
qu'il or qu'elle rompe
que nous rompiions
que vous rompiez
qu'ils or qu'elles rompent

PERFECT.

(That I may have broken)

Que j'aie rompu
que tu aies rompu
qu'il or qu'elle ait rompu
que nous ayons rompu
que vous ayez rompu
qu'ils or qu'elles aient rompu.

IMPERFECT.

(That I might break)

Que je rompis
que tu rompisses
qu'il or qu'elle rompît
que nous rompiissions
que vous rompiez
qu'ils or qu'elles rompiissent

PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have broken)

Que j'eusse rompu
que tu eusses rompu
qu'il or qu'elle eût rompu
que nous eussions rompu
que vous eussiez rompu
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent rompu.

ACTIVE VERBS.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

Rompre (to break)

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Rompant (breaking)

PERFECT.

Avoir rompu (to have broken)

PERFECT.

Ayant rompu (having broken)

PAST (VARIABLE).

Rompu, fem. rompue (broken).

Exercise 30.

Indicatif présent.—J'attends de la compagnie aujourd'hui. Il répond correctement. Vous défendez votre patrie.

Imparfait.—Tu suspendais ton jugement. Ce chien mordait tout le monde. Vous prétendiez à sa place.

Passé défini.—Il condescendit à ses désirs. Nous fondîmes le plomb. Ils tendirent leurs bras.

Futur.—Je répondrai à votre lettre. Il entendra ce qu'ils disent. Elles vendront leur maison de campagne.

Conditionnel présent.—Tu tordrais la corde. Nous confondrions leur orgueil. Ils prendraient leurs chapeaux dans le vestiaire.

Impératif.—Entends leur justification. Attendons l'arrivée du bateau à vapeur.

Subjonctif présent.—Que tu vendes ces fruits trop cher. Que vous répandiez l'eau sur le tapis. Qu'ils tendent cette corde.

Imparfait.—Que je tendisse au même but. Que nous fendissions la presse. Que vous entendissiez le bruit du tonnerre.

Infinitif.—Prétendre savoir toutes choses est ridicule.

Participes.—En fendant ce morceau de bois, je me suis blessé. La cause entendue, le président prononça la sentence.

Temps composées.—J'ai vendu tous mes livres. Vous aviez confondu ces deux règles. Il aura répondu à mon appel.

¹ immédiatement, ² régulièrement, ³ tendre à, ⁴ tant (m.), ⁵ défendre, ⁶ usage (m.), ⁷ correspondre, ⁸ séance (f.), ⁹ linge (m.), ¹⁰ terres (f.), ¹¹ chapeau (m.), ¹² convention (f.), ¹³ fendre, ¹⁴ toute la journée, ¹⁵ répandre, ¹⁶ chemin (m.), ¹⁷ ne devriez pas, ¹⁸ bruit (m.), ¹⁹ confondre, ²⁰ raison (f.), ²¹ arme (f.), ²² grand escalier (m.)

4 *Indicative présent.*—I am coming down immediately.¹ He answers my letters very regularly.² We are aiming at³ a difficult end.⁴

Imperfect.—I was forbidding⁵ him the use⁶ of it. She was writing. You were confounding this rule with another.

Past definite.—(He) corresponded⁷ with your friends. We suspended the meeting.⁸ She wrung the linen⁹ in the garden.

Future.—It shall sell all my estates.¹⁰ She will take her bound.¹¹ You will break the agreement.¹²

Conditional present.—Thou wouldst answer my letters. We should recast the poem. They would hear us.

Imperative.—Split¹⁸ the wood. Let us hang up our coats in the cloak room.

Subjunctive present.—That I may wait all day long.¹⁴ That we should sell all the jewels. That you should stretch this rope.

Imperfect.—That she might shear the sheep. That I might scatter¹⁵ flowers on his path.¹⁶ That they might defend their interests.

Infinitive.—You should not¹⁷ sell your goods so dear.

Participles.—Hearing this rumour¹⁸ I went out. His insolence (*f*) was brought to confusion.¹⁹

Compound tenses.—I had heard his reasons.²⁰ We should have melted into tears.²¹ Thou wouldst have waited. That I might have come down by the principal staircase.²²

SECTION III.

CONJUGATION OF VERBS. 1. Interrogatively; 2. Negatively; 3. Interrogatively with a negative.

136. If we wish to conjugate these verbs *interrogatively* we have only to displace the pronoun, putting it (in the simple tenses) after the verb: *aimez-vous*? (=do you love?), or in the compound tenses, between the auxiliary and the past participle: *ai-je aimé* (=have I loved?), *avais-je aimé* (=had I loved?), *aurai-je aimé* (=shall I have loved?) etc.

137. If the first person singular ends in an *e* mute (*j'aime*=I love; *que je puisse*=that I may be able), that *e* mute is replaced by a close *é*: *aime-je* (=do I love?) *puissé-je* (=may I?).

138. When the third person singular ends with a vowel, as is the case for the first conjugation (*il aime*=he loves; *il va*=he goes) a *t*, called euphonic, is placed between the verb and the pronoun (*aime-t-il*, *va-t-il*! =does he love, does he go?)

The old French always had a *t* at the end of the third person, and said *il aimet*, *il vat*, without sounding the *t*. This letter, being mute, disappeared from the direct conjugation; but it persisted in the interrogative one, on account of the following vowel. This *t*, which is called *euphonic t*, and which is joined to the verb by a hyphen, was therefore really, in former times, part of the verb.

139. Est-ce que (=is it that) is also used in asking questions, especially with verbs of one syllable: **est-ce que je vends?** (=do I sell?) **est-ce que vous aimez cette ville?** (=do you like this town?). Then the verb is put in the affirmative.

In sentences like: You see it, do you not? You will do it, will you not? You have not done it, have you? the interrogation is in every case expressed in French by **n'est-ce pas?** *Vous le voyez, n'est-ce pas?* *Vous le ferez, n'est-ce pas?* *Vous ne l'avez pas fait, n'est-ce pas?*

140. When in a question the verb has a noun for the subject, as: Is your friend here? the noun is placed first, as in the affirmation, and the pronoun (of the same gender, number, and person as the noun) is placed after the verb to show that the sentence is interrogative: **Votre ami est-il ici?** (=is your friend here?) **Vos amis sont-ils ici?** (=are your friends here?).

141. In order to conjugate the verbs in the negative form (with the negative *ne...pas*, *ne...point*), it suffices that we should place *ne* between the pronoun and the verb, and *pas* after the verb, for the simple tenses: *je ne veux pas* (=I do not wish); *tu ne veux pas* (=thou dost not wish) etc. In the compound tenses, the word *pas* is placed between the auxiliary and the participle: *je n'ai pas voulu* (=I have not wished); *je n'aurais pas voulu* (=I would not have wished) etc. With the infinitive, *pas* generally comes before the verb: *pour ne pas faire cela* (=not to do that).

142. To conjugate a verb interrogatively with a negative, *ne* is placed before the verb and *pas* after the pronoun following the verb: **ne vois-je pas?** (=do I not see?). In the compound tenses *ne* comes before the auxiliary, and *pas* after the pronoun following the auxiliary: **n'ai je pas vu?** (=have I not seen?)

143. A table of these conjugations will be found at page 156.

Exercise 3

Indicatif présent.—Préféré-je cet ouvrage? Il ne finit pas ses devoirs. Ne recevons-nous pas son avis avec reconnaissance?

Imparfait.—Demeurais-tu à Londres? Il ne renchérissait pas ses marchandises. N'entendaient-ils pas le bruit de la voiture? Vous aimiez cette ville, n'est-ce pas?

gratitude

vous

Passé définit.—Conçut-elle toute l'importance de cette démarche? N'aima-t-il pas son séjour à la campagne? Vous terminâtes votre gloire par votre cruauté. *Smith* *Barth*

Futur.—Est-ce que nous ne profiterons pas d'une occasion aussi favorable? Vous ne réussirez jamais à le persuader. Vos amis ne vendront-ils pas leur propriété?

Conditionnel présent.—Je n'agirais pas contre ma conscience. Choisiriez-vous ce cheval? Ne recevriez-vous pas du monde demain?

Impératif.—Ne reçois jamais de ses lettres.

Subjonctif présent.—Que je ne rende compte à personne.

Imparfait.—Que ce chemin n'aboutit pas au château.

Infinitif.—Ne pas me répondre est une preuve d'impertinence.

Participes.—N'ayant pas trahi sa patrie, il est plein de confiance.

Temps composées.—Avez-vous chanté ce matin? Il n'avait pas démoli cette chaumière. N'eurent-ils pas aperçu le vaisseau dans le port? Je n'aurais jamais condescendu à une telle demande. N'auront-ils ni livres ni papiers? Qu'elle n'ait pas d'argent. Que nous ne fussions pas dénués de ressources.

¹ cave (*f.*), ² revendre, ³ voiture (*f.*), ⁴ antrefois, ⁵ projet (*m.*), ⁶ négliger, ⁷ réussir, ⁸ réfléchir à, ⁹ proposition (*f.*), ¹⁰ rendre, ¹¹ arc (*m.*), ¹² ternir, ¹³ céder, ¹⁴ louer, ¹⁵ cloche (*f.*), ¹⁶ honorablement, ¹⁷ tromper, ¹⁸ critiquer, ¹⁹ sévèrement.

Indicative présent.—Do you answer (to) his letter? He does not finish his picture. Do they not dine?

Imperfect.—Was I going down into the cellar? We did not resell² this carriage.³ Did they not correspond formerly⁴?

Perfect definite.—I had no money. She did not burst into tears. Did he not perceive my design⁵?

Future.—I shall never neglect⁶ my duties. They will succeed,⁷ will they not? Will you recast your work?

Conditional.—I would not disobey. Would your friend reflect on⁸ that proposal⁹? Would they negotiate that treaty?

Imperative.—Do not return¹⁰ (to) him his letter.

Subjunctive présent.—That I may not owe this sum.

Imperfect.—That they might not stretch that bow.¹¹

Infinitive.—Not to sully¹² your reputation (*f.*), confess your fault.

Participles.—Not having yielded,¹³ he was praised¹⁴ by the journal.

Compound tenses.—I have not heard the bell.¹⁵ Wast thou acting honourably?¹⁶ Did she not sell her estates? I shall not have received this dangerous man. Would she not have rewarded the merit of that pupil? That they may not have deceived¹⁷ you. That we might not have criticised¹⁸ him too severely.¹⁹

SECTION IV.

REMARKS ON THE FORMATION OF THE TENSES.

143. Notice that in the first person of the present indicative the verbs in **-er** do not take an *s* (*je chante*), while the other conjugations do (*je finis, je romps*).

This exception is a vestige of the Old French language: the first person formerly never took an *s*: *j'aime, je voi, je rend* (=I love, I see, I restore); about the beginning of the sixteenth century, an *s* was added, by analogy with the *s* of the second person *tu chantes, tu lis, tu vois* (=thou singest, thou readest, thou seest); but the first conjugation escaped this assimilation, and even in the case of the other conjugations, the forms without *s* still remained for a long time in the language of poetry. Thus we find in the seventeenth century: *je voi, je li, je croi*. (LA FONTAINE, MOLIERE, CORNEILLE.)

144. The imperfect is the same in all conjugations (*-ais, -ois, -ait, -ions, -iez, -aient*), always remembering that the conjugation in **-ir** interpolates the particle **-iss** between the root and the termination: *je fin-iss-ais, tu fin-iss-ais*.

Before the time of Voltaire, the imperfect was always written with the syllable *ois* (*j'aimois, je chantois*, etc.) instead of *ais*. It was he who first wrote: *j'aimais, je chantois*, etc. This orthographical modification was only adopted by the Academy in 1835. A century before Voltaire, in 1675, an obscure lawyer, Nicolas Bérain, had already asked for this reform.

145. The future is formed throughout all the conjugations in the same manner, that is to say, by adding to the infinitive of the verb the indicative present of the verb *avoir* (*ai, as, a*, etc.).

Je chanterai is therefore exactly equivalent to *j'ai à chanter*; hence: *aimerai, as, a*. In the plural, however, the syllable *ai* is struck out: *aimer- (av) ons, aimer- (av) ez, aimer-ont*. The third conjugation is an exception to this rule, as the termination *oir* is shortened into *r*: *je recev-r-ai*.

The conditional present is formed in the same way from the imperfect indicative, the syllable *av* being suppressed: *j'aimer- (av) ais*.

146. It will be observed that all the persons of the imperative are borrowed from the corresponding persons of the indicative present. The only exception

is in the first conjugation, which has *chante* without an *s*, whilst *finis*, *reçois*, *romps* retain the *s* of the indicative (*tu finis*, *tu reçois*, *tu romps*). But the *s* of *chante* is expressed, and reappears when the imperative is placed before a word beginning with a vowel, such as *y* or *en*: *chantes-en une partie* (=sing part of it), *vas-y voir* (=go there and see), etc.

147. The tenses of the verbs are divided into **primitive** and **derivative**. From the five primitive tenses all the others are formed in the following manner:—

The PRESENT INFINITIVE forms

1. The future, see § 145.
2. The conditional, see § 145.

The PRESENT PARTICIPLE "

1. The plural of the present indicative: *aimant*, *aimons*, *aimex*, *aiment*.
2. The imperfect indicative: *finissant*, *finissais*, etc.
3. The present subjunctive: *finissant*, *finisse*, *finisses*, except the 3rd conjugation, in which it reappears: *recevant*, *reçoive*.

The PAST PARTICIPLE "

- All the compound tenses with the auxiliary *avoir* or *être*.

The PRESENT INDICATIVE "

the imperative, see § 146.

The PAST DEFINITE "

- The imperfect subjunctive, by adding *se* to the second person singular: *tu aimas*, *aimasse*.

148. **Idiomatic tenses.**—Besides the tenses given in the models for the four conjugations, the French use others which are made up with the verbs *aller* (=to go), *venir* (=to come), and *devoir* (=to owe, to be obliged, must). Here is a list of these tenses:—

1. PAST JUST ELAPSED.
(I have just spoken)

Je viens de parler
tu viens de parler
il vient de parler
nous venons de parler
vous venez de parler
ils viennent de parler.

2. PAST DEFINITE ANTERIOR.
(I had just spoken)

Je venais de parler
tu venais de parler
il venait de parler
nous venions de parler
vous veniez de parler
ils venaient de parler.

3. FUTURE PROXIMATE.

(*I am going to speak*)

Je vais parler
tu vas parler
il va parler
nous allons parler
vous allez parler
ils vont parler.

4. FUTURE DEFINITE.

(*I am to, or I must, or I intend to speak*)

Je dois parler
tu dois parler
il doit parler
nous devons parler
vous devez parler
ils doivent parler.

5. FUTURE IMPERFECT ANTERIOR.

(*I was going to speak*)

J'allais parler
tu allais parler
il allait parler
nous allions parler
vous alliez parler
ils allaient parler.

6. CONDITIONAL IMPERFECT.

(*I was to, or I intended to speak*)

Je devais parler
tu devais parler
il devait parler
nous devions parler
vous deviez parler
ils devaient parler.

7. CONDITIONAL FUTURE.*

(*I ought to, or I should speak*)

Je devrais parler
tu devrais parler
il devrait parler
nous devrions parler
vous devriez parler
ils devraient parler.

8. CONDITIONAL ANTERIOR.*

(*I ought to, or I should have spoken*)

J'aurais dû parler
tu aurais dû parler
il aurait dû parler
nous aurions dû parler
vous auriez dû parler
ils auraient dû parler.

There is also a past tense with *devoir*, expressing either obligation or supposition—

J'ai dû parler } = I have had to speak, or must (surely) have
tu as dû parler } = thou hadst to speak, &c. [spoken.

The verb *faire* (=to do, to make), is frequently used as an auxiliary, and is also followed (like the above) by the present infinitive: *il a fait faire un habit* (=he has ordered, caused to be made, a coat, or he has had a coat made).

* In translating into French any sentence in which *shall, will, should, would, may, might* are used, the pupil should be very careful to distinguish whether those words simply express a future or a subjunctive, or whether they express a duty, a strong intention, or a capacity; in the latter case they must be translated literally into French, *shall, should* by *devoir*; *will, would* by *vouloir* and *may, might*, by *pouvoir*, according to the examples given above.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. How many kinds of verbs are there?
2. What is an *active* verb?—By what other name is it known?
3. Write the subjunctive present of *aimer, chanter, devoir, rendre*; the past definite of *agir, recevoir, vendre*; the conditional past of *parler* and *définir*.
4. How is a verb conjugated interrogatively?
5. Remark on the following moods and tenses: the *indicative present*, the *imperfect indicative*, the *future*, the *conditional*, the *imperative*.
6. Conjugate negatively the future simple of *parler, douter, recevoir*; the conditional past of *gémir, devoir, chanter*.
7. Conjugate: 1. interrogatively; 2. interrogatively with a negative, the indicative present of *agir*; the past definite of *devoir*.
8. What are the primitive tenses, and what tenses do they form?
9. Give a list of the idiomatic tenses.

SECTION V.

PASSIVE VERBS.

149. The passive verb expresses an action suffered by the subject: *l'agneau a été mangé par le loup* (=the lamb has been eaten by the wolf).

Every active verb can become passive, that is to say, it can be employed in the passive form. *Manger* (=to eat) is active in *le chat mange la souris* (=the cat eats the mouse); it becomes passive in *la souris est mangée par le chat* (=the mouse is eaten by the cat).

NOTE.—The French seldom use the passive verb. They employ instead the active verb with an indefinite pronoun for subject: *on vend le sucre quarante centimes la livre* (=sugar is sold at forty centimes a pound), or they use the reflexive verb. (See § 160.)

150. There is only one form of conjugation for the passive verbs; it consists of the auxiliary *être*, followed (in all its moods, tenses, and persons) by the *past participle* of the verb we wish to conjugate: *je suis mordu* (=I am bitten); *j'ai été mordu* (=I have been bitten); *je serai mordu* (=I shall be bitten), etc.

151. Care must be taken to make the past participle always agree with the subject of the verb: *il est mordu* (=he is bitten); *elle est mordue* (=she is bitten); *ils sont mordus* (=they are bitten), etc.

Conjugation of the Passive Verb ÊTRE AIMÉ
(= to be loved).

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

(I am loved)

Je suis	}	aimé or aimée
tu es		
il or elle est		
nous sommes	}	aimés or aimées
vous * êtes		
ils or elles sont		

PAST INDEFINITE.

(I have been loved)

J'ai été	}	aimé or aimée
tu as été		
il or elle a été		
nous avons été	}	aimés or aimées
vous avez été		
ils or elles ont été		

IMPERFECT.

(I was loved)

J'étais	}	aimé or aimée
tu étais		
il or elle était		
nous étions	}	aimés or aimées
vous étiez		
ils or elles étaient		

PLUPERFECT.

(I had been loved)

J'avais été	}	aimé or aimée
tu avais été		
il or elle avait été		
nous avions été	}	aimés or aimées
vous aviez été		
ils or elles avaient été		

PAST DEFINITE.

(I was loved)

Je fus	}	aimé or aimée
tu fus		
il or elle fut		
nous fûmes	}	aimés or aimées
vous fûtes		
ils or elles furent		

PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had been loved)

J'eus été	}	aimé or aimée
Tu eus été		
il or elle eut été		
nous eûmes été	}	aimés or aimées
vous eûtes été		
ils or elles eurent été		

FUTURE.

(I shall be loved)

Je serai	}	aimé or aimée
tu seras		
il or elle sera		
nous serons	}	aimés or aimées
vous serez		
ils or elles seront		

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have been loved)

J'aurai été	}	aimé or aimée
tu auras été		
il or elle aura été		
nous aurons été	}	aimés or aimées
vous aurez été		
ils or elles auront été		

* When *vous* (=you) is used, out of politeness, instead of *tu* (=thou), the past participle remains, of course, in the singular (either masculine or feminine).

PASSIVE VERBS.

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

(I should be loved)

Je serais	}	aimé or aimée
tu serais		
il or elle serait	}	aimés or aimées.
nous serions		
vous seriez		
ils or elles seraient	}	aimés or aimées.

ANTERIOR.

(I would have been loved)

J'aurais été	}	aimé or aimée
tu aurais été		
il or elle aurait été	}	aimés or aimées.
nous aurions été		
vous auriez été		
ils or elles auraient été	}	aimés or aimées.

IMPERATIVE.

PRESENT.

(Be loved)

Sois aimé or aimée	}	aimés or aimées.
Soyons		
Soyez	}	aimés or aimées.
.....		

PERFECT.

(Have [thou] been loved)

Aie été aimé or aimée	}	aimés or aimées.
Ayons été		
Ayez été	}	aimés or aimées.
.....		

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

(That I may be loved)

Que je sois	}	aimé or aimée
que tu sois		
qu'il or qu'elle soit	}	aimés or aimées.
que nous soyons		
que vous soyez		
qu'ils or qu'elles soient	}	aimés or aimées.

PERFECT.

(That I might have been loved)

Que j'aie été	}	aimé or aimée
que tu aies été		
qu'il or qu'elle ait été	}	aimés or aimées.
que nous ayons été		
que vous ayez été		
qu'ils or qu'elles aient été	}	aimés or aimées.

IMPERFECT.

(That I might be loved)

Que je fusse	}	aimé or aimée
que tu fusses		
qu'il or qu'elle fût	}	aimés or aimées.
que nous fussions		
que vous fussiez		
qu'ils or qu'elles fussent	}	aimés or aimées.

PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have been loved)

Que j'eusse été	}	aimé or aimée
que tu eusses été		
qu'il or qu'elle eût été	}	aimés or aimées.
que nous eussions été		
que vous eussiez été		
qu'ils or qu'elles eussent été	}	aimés or aimées.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

(To be loved)

Être aimé or aimée

PERFECT.

(To have been loved)

Avoir été aimé or aimée.

X 7

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

(Being loved)

Étant aimé or aimée

PERFECT.

(Having been loved)

Ayant été aimé or aimée.

PAST (VARIABLE).

Aimé, fem. aimée (loved).

Exercise 32.

Write affirmatively in the passive voice: the indicative present of *aimer, recevoir, vendre, finir*; the subjunctive present of *travailler, devoir, répandre, définir*.

Write negatively in the same voice: the imperfect subjunctive of *concevoir, répandre, éblouir, montrer*; the conditional present of *entendre, critiquer, obéir, concevoir*.

Write interrogatively in the same voice: the perfect definite of *consoler, nourrir, apercevoir, confondre*; the future anterior of *rendre, décevoir, munir, tourmenter*.

Write interrogatively with a negative in the same voice: the pluperfect indicative of *tromper, désobéir, recevoir, rendre*; the conditional past of *décevoir, obéir, blâmer, fonder*.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. What is a passive verb? 2. Describe the formation of a passive verb. 3. How many conjugations of passive verbs are there? 4. Remark on the participle of passive verbs. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 5. Write the subjunctive present, the conditional past, and the future anterior of the passive verbs: <i>être trompé, être battu, être reçu, être battu</i>. 6. What do the French often use instead of the passive verb? |
|---|--|

SECTION VI.

NEUTER VERBS.

152. A neuter verb is one which expresses the state or the action of the subject, but which has no direct complement or object: *Je tombe* (=I fall), *nous languissons* (=we languish).

The neuter verb is also called *intransitive*, because it does not transmit the action to a complement.

153. The simple tenses of the neuter verbs are the same as those of the active ones. The compound tenses of the neuter verbs are formed, sometimes with the help of the auxiliary *être*: *Je suis arrivé* (=I have

arrived), sometimes with the help of the auxiliary **avoir**: *j'ai dormi* (=I have slept).

There are only twelve neuter verbs which are conjugated with the auxiliary **être**. They are the following: *aller* (=to go); *arriver* (=to arrive); *décéder* (=to die); *échoir* (=to fall due); *éclore* (=to be hatched); *entrer* (=to enter); *mourir* (=to die); *naître* (=to be born); *partir* (=to go away); *sortir* (=to go out); *tomber* (=to fall, and its compound *retomber*=to fall again); *venir* (=to come, and its compounds: *devenir* [=to become]; *inter-venir* [=to interfere]; *parvenir* [=to succeed]; *revenir* [=to come back]; *survenir* [=to arrive unexpectedly]).

154. When the neuter verbs are conjugated with the auxiliary **être**, the participle always agrees with the subject or nominative: *il est arrivé* (=he has arrived), *elle est arrivée* (=she has arrived), *ils sont arrivés* (=they have arrived), etc.

Conjugation of the verb TOMBER (=to fall).

Stem, tomb ; termination, er.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT

(*I fall*)
Je tombe
tu tombes
il or elle tombe
nous tombons
vous tombez
ils or elles tombent

PERFECT.

(*I have fallen*)
Je suis
tu es } **tombé or tombée**
il or elle est
nous sommes } **tombés or**
vous êtes } **tombées**
ils or elles sont

IMPERFECT.

(*I was falling*)
Je tombais
tu tombais
il or elle tombait
nous tombions
vous tombiez
ils or elles tombaient

PLUPERFECT.

(*I had fallen*)
J'étais
tu étais } **tombé or**
il or elle était } **tombée**
nous étions } **tombés or**
vous étiez } **tombées**
ils or elles étaient

PAST DEFINITE.

(*I fell*)
Je tombai
tu tombas
il or elle tomba
nous tombâmes
vous tombâtes
ils or elles tombèrent

PAST ANTERIOR.

(*I had fallen*)
Je fus
tu fus } **tombé or tombée**
il or elle fut
nous fûmes } **tombés or**
vous fûtes } **tombées**
ils or elles furent

FUTURE.

(I shall fall)

Je tomberai
tu tomberas
il or elle tombera
nous tomberons
vous tomberez
ils or elles tomberont.

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have fallen)

Je serai
tu seras
il or elle sera
nous serons
vous serez
ils or elles seront

tombé or tombée
tombés or tombées.

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

(I should fall)

Je tomberais
tu tomberais
il or elle tomberait
nous tomberions
vous tomberiez
ils or elles tomberaient.

ANTERIOR.

(I should have fallen)

Je serais
tu serais
il or elle serait
nous serions
vous seriez
ils or elles seraient

tombé or tombée
tombés or tombées.

IMPERATIVE.

PRESENT.

Fall [thou]

Tombe . . .
tombons . . .
tombex . . .
.

PERFECT.

(Have [thou] fallen)

Sois tombé or tombée
soyons
soyez
.

tombés or tombées.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

(That I may fall)

Que je tombe
que tu tombes
qu'il or qu'elle tombe
que nous tombions
que vous tombiez
qu'ils or qu'elles tombent.

PERFECT.

(That I may have fallen)

Que je sois
que tu sois
qu'il or qu'elle soit
que nous soyons
que vous soyez
qu'ils or qu'elles soient

tombé or tombée
tombés or tombées.

IMPERFECT.

(That I might fall)

Que je tombasse
que tu tombasses
qu'il or qu'elle tombât
que nous tombassions
que vous tombassiez
qu'ils or qu'elles tombassent.

PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have fallen)

Que je fusse
que tu fusses
qu'il or qu'elle fût
que nous fussions
que vous fussiez
qu'ils or qu'elles fussent

tombé or tombée
tombés or tombées.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

(To fall)

Tomber

PERFECT.

(To have fallen)

Être tombé or tombée.

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

(Falling)

Tombant

PERFECT.

(Having fallen)

Étant tombé or tombée.

PAST (VARIABLE).

Tombé, *sem.* tombée (fallen).

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. What is a <i>neuter</i> verb? 2. Under what other name is it known? 3. How are the compound tenses of <i>neuter</i> verbs formed? 4. Name the <i>neuter</i> verbs conjugated with the auxiliary <i>être</i>. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 5. Remark on the past participle of <i>neuter</i> verbs conjugated with the auxiliary <i>être</i>. 6. Write out the subjunctive present of <i>tomber</i>, negatively; and the conditional past of the same verb interrogatively. |
|--|---|

Handwritten signature: L. E. Dore

SECTION VII.

REFLEXIVE VERBS.

155. Whenever the subject at the same time performs and bears the action, as *je me mords*, *je me flatte* (=I bite myself, I flatter myself), the verb is called **reflexive**, because the action which the subject performs is likewise reflected by it.

This verb has likewise been called *pronominal*, on account of its being conjugated with two pronouns.

156. Reflexive verbs are divided into two classes:

1. The verbs reflexive by nature, *s'écrouler* (=to fall to pieces); *se cabrer* (=to rear); *s'évanouir* (=to faint).
2. The active verbs, as *laver* (=to wash), or *neuter* verbs, as *nuire* (=to injure), employed in a reflexive form: *je me suis lavé* (=I have washed myself); *je me suis nuï* (=I have injured myself).

157. Reflexive verbs are conjugated in all tenses with two pronouns, viz., the subject *je*, and the complement *me*; these pronouns must always belong to the same person, because the action is both performed and suffered by the subject: *je me lave*, *tu te nuis*, etc.

158. The compound tenses of reflexive verbs are formed with the auxiliary *être*.

159. When the verb is reflexive by nature, the participle agrees: *ils se sont repentis* (=they have repented);* wher., on the other hand, the verb is only used reflexively, the participle agrees, if the verb is active, and preceded by its direct object: *ils se sont aimés* (=they have loved one another); but it remains invariable, if the verb is neuter: *elles se sont plu* (=they have pleased one another); or if the verb, being active, is followed by its direct object: *ils se sont dit des injures* (=they have insulted each other).

160. The reflexive verb is often used in French, when the passive is used in English: *Le sucre se vend quarante centimes la livre* (=sugar is sold at forty centimes a pound); *ce légume se mange cru* (=this vegetable is eaten raw, uncooked).

Conjugation of the Reflexive Verb SE REPOSER

(= to rest).

Stem, **repos**; termination, **or.**

s'occuper

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

(I rest)

Je me repose
tu te reposes
il or elle se repose
nous nous reposons
vous vous reposez
ils or elles se reposent

PAST INDEFINITE.

(I have rested)

Je me suis } **reposé or**
tu t'es } **reposée**
il or elle s'est }
nous nous sommes } **reposés or**
vous vous êtes } **reposées**
ils or elles se sont }

IMPERFECT.

(I was resting)

Je me reposais
tu te reposais
il or elle se reposait
nous nous reposions
vous vous reposiez
ils or elles se reposaient

PLUPERFECT.

(I had rested)

Je m'étais } **reposé or**
tu t'étais } **reposée**
il or elle s'était }
nous nous étions } **reposés or**
vous vous étiez } **reposées**
ils or elles s'étaient }

* The reflexive verb *s'arroger* (=to assume [for oneself]) is an exception to the rule, as the personal pronoun is always the indirect object.

PAST DEFINITE.

(I rested)

Je me reposai
tu te reposas
il or elle se reposa
nous nous reposâmes
vous vous reposâtes
ils or elles se reposèrent

FUTURE.

(I shall rest)

Je me reposerais
tu te reposeras
il or elle se reposera
nous nous reposerons
vous vous reposerez
ils or elles se reposeront

PRESENT.

(I should rest)

Je me reposerais
tu te reposerais
il or elle se reposerait
nous nous reposerions
vous vous seriez
ils or elles se reposeraient

CONDITIONAL.

PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had rested)

Je me fus } reposé or
tu te fus } reposée
il or elle se fut }
nous nous fûmes } reposées or
vous vous fûtes } reposées
ils or elles se furent }

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

(I shall have rested)

Je me serai } reposé or
tu te seras } reposée
il or elle sera }
nous nous serons } reposés or
vous vous serez } reposées
ils or elles se seront }

ANTERIOR.

(I should have rested)

Je me serais } reposé or
tu te serais } reposée
il or elle se serait }
nous nous serions } reposés or
vous vous seriez } reposées
ils or elles se seraient }

IMPERATIVE.

PRESENT.

(Rest)

Repose-toi
reposons-nous
reposez-vous

PERFECT.

(Never used.)

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

(That I may rest)

Que je me repose
que tu te poses
qu'il or qu'elle se repose
que nous nous reposions
que vous vous reposiez
qu'ils or qu'elles se reposent

PERFECT.

(That I may have rested)

Que je me sois } reposé
que tu te sois } or
qu'il or qu'elle se soit } reposée
que nous nous soyons }
que vous vous soyez } reposés or
qu'ils or qu'elles se } reposées
soient }

consider to

IMPERFECT.

(That I might rest)

Que je me reposasse
 que tu te reposasses
 qu'il or qu'elle se reposât
 que nous nous reposassions
 que vous vous reposassiez
 qu'ils or qu'elles se reposassent

PLUPERFECT.

(That I might have rested)

Que je me fusse } reposé
 que tu te fusses } or
 qu'il or qu'elle se fût } reposée
 que nous nous fussions }
 que vous vous fussiez } reposés
 qu'ils or qu'elles se } or
 fussent } reposées

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

(To rest)

Se reposer

PERFECT.

(To have rested)

S'être reposé or reposée.

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

(Resting).

Se reposant

PERFECT.

(Having rested)

S'étant reposé or reposée

PAST (VARIABLE).

Reposé, fem. reposée (rested).

637 The interrogative and negative conjugation of reflexive verbs will be found at page 164.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. Define a reflexive verb.
2. Under what other name is it known?
3. Describe the various classes of reflexive verbs.
4. What auxiliary is used in the compound tenses of reflexive verbs?
5. For what purpose do the French often use the reflexive verb?
6. Write the future anterior, the past indefinite, and the imperfect subjunctive of the verb *se reposer*.

Exercice 33.

Indicatif présent.—Je m'habille. Il ne se repose pas. Vous vous tourmentez en vain. Ils se baignent tous les étés.

Imparfait.—Je me proposais de vous écrire. Votre frère ne s'imaginait-il pas que vous aviez tort? Nous ne nous abonnions pas au cabinet de lecture.

Parfait défini.—Je ne me fâchai jamais sans motif. Nous enorgueillîmes-nous de cet avantage? Vous ne vous dépêchâtes pas.

Futur.—T'apercevras-tu de son dessein? Il s'empressera de le faire. Ne nous acquitterons-nous pas de nos compliments? Elles s'enrhumeront.

Conditionnel présent.—Je ne me déciderais jamais aussi imprudemment. Ne s'appliquerait-elle pas au dessin? Votre sœur ne

address to mother

writing

subscribing to
to get angry
to hasten

se tromperait-elle pas? Ces élèves ne s'habitueront pas au travail.

Impératif. — Repose-toi. Dépêchons-nous. Attendez-vous à recevoir de nos nouvelles? Ne nous fatiguons pas trop.

Subjonctif présent. — Il désire que je me porte mieux. Qu'il ne s'amuse pas à mes dépens. Que nous nous précipitions dans le danger. Que ces fleurs ne se flétrissent pas.

Imparfait. — J'exigeais que tu te nourrisses avec soin. Que nous nous détournassions du droit chemin. Que vous vous confondissiez en excuses. Qu'ils ne s'enorgueillissent pas d'un avantage insignifiant.

Infinitif. — Ne se reposer qu'à de longs intervalles. Ne s'être jamais trompé.

Participes. — Ne me fiant qu'à un honnête homme, je ne crois m'être aperçu d'aucune fraude.

Temps composés. — Je me suis esquivé. Tu ne t'étais pas rendu à discrétion. Elle ne se fut pas réjouie de cette nouvelle. Vous seriez-vous dégradés dans l'opinion publique? Que je me sois décidé à rester. Que tu ne te fusses pas égaré dans la forêt. Que cette propriété ne se fut pas vendue si cher.

¹se rendre, ²raison (f.), ³jouir de, ⁴santé (f.), ⁵s'enorgueillir, ⁶léger avantage (m.), ⁷s'offenser, ⁸de poisson, ⁹se détromper, ¹⁰s'emparer, ¹¹en vain, ¹²se réunir, ¹³se réjouir de, ¹⁴se précipiter, ¹⁵fortune (f.), ¹⁶se tromper, ¹⁷s'égarer, ¹⁸se rétracter, ¹⁹s'apercevoir de, ²⁰s'évanouir, ²¹s'esquiver, ²²se recueillir, ²³surprenant, ²⁴s'acquitter de, ²⁵avouer, ²⁶se condamner, ²⁷se moquer de, ²⁸se décider, ²⁹se déshonorer, ³⁰se vanter.

Indicative present. — I yield¹ to his reasons.² Dost thou not enjoy³ better health⁴? We trust an honest man.

Imperfect. — He boasted⁵ of a trifling advantage.⁶ Were you not offended⁷? They feed on fish.⁸

Perfect definite. — She undecieved⁹ herself. Thou didst not perceive my plan. They took possession¹⁰ of the farm.

Future. — I shall subscribe to the circulating library. He will torment himself uselessly.¹¹ You will not meet¹² here.

Conditional present. — Thou wouldst catch cold. We should rejoice at¹³ your success. They would rush¹⁴ into (the) danger (m.).

Imperative. — Make haste. Let us not trust too much to his good luck.¹⁵ Do not make a mistake.¹⁶

Subjunctive present. — That I may not lose myself¹⁷ in the wood. That she may not retract.¹⁸ That we may not wound ourselves.

Imperfect. — That thou might perceive¹⁹ the force of this argument. That she might not faint away.²⁰ That they might steal away.²¹

Infinitive.—To collect one's thoughts²³ is often necessary. To have perceived this error is not wonderful.²³

Participles.—Going to Paris, I shall perform²⁴ your commissions with pleasure. Having made a mistake, he confessed²⁵ it.

Compound tenses.—I have condemned²⁶ myself. Thou hadst not trusted thy father. We shall not have laughed at²⁷ him. You would not have made up your mind²⁸ to remain. That they may have disgraced²⁹ themselves. That I might have boasted³⁰ of it.

SECTION VIII.

IMPERSONAL VERBS.

161. An **impersonal** verb expresses an action which cannot be ascribed to any special subject or person, such as the verbs *neiger* (=to snow), and *pleuvoir* (=to rain).

162. Impersonal verbs are used only in the third person singular, and are preceded by the pronoun **il**, which refers to no subject, and has merely a vague and indefinite sense.

The pronoun **il** of the impersonal verbs is not the same as the pronoun **il** of the active verbs; this latter one stands for a distinct person; the former signifies *cela* (=that), and has only a vague, indeterminate sense.

163. Besides the verbs which are naturally impersonal (as *il pleut*, *il neige*), we can employ both active and neuter verbs impersonally: *Il tombe de l'eau* (=water is falling); *il fait beau* (=the weather is fine); *il convient d'obéir* (=it is proper to obey), etc.

These verbs having only one person, are called **unipersonal**.

Conjugation of the Impersonal Verb **NEIGER** (=to snow).

Stem, **neig**; termination **er**.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.	PAST INDEFINITE.
Il neige (it snows)	Il a neigé (it has snowed).
IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
Il neigeait (it was snowing)	Il avait neigé (it had snowed).

PAST DEFINITE.

Il neigea (*it snowed*)

PAST ANTERIOR.

Il *eut* neigé (*it had snowed*).

FUTURE.

Il neigera (*it will snow*)

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

Il *aura* neigé (*it will have snowed*).

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

Il neigerait (*it would snow*)

ANTERIOR.

Il *aurait* neigé (*it would have snowed*).

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Qu'il neige (*that it may snow*)

PERFECT.

Qu'il *ait* neigé (*that it may have snowed*).

IMPERFECT.

Qu'il neigeât (*that it might snow*)

PLUPERFECT.

Qu'il *eût* neigé (*that it might have snowed*).

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

Neiger (*to snow*)

PERFECT.

Avoir neigé (*to have snowed*).

PARTICIPLE PAST (INVARIABLE).

Neigé (*snowed*).

Note the use of *avoir* with the adverb **y** (=there), as an impersonal verb:

Present Ind.—Il **y** a (= there is), etc.

SECTION IX.

IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

164. Every verb is called *irregular* which, in the formation of its simple tenses, deviates from the rules we have explained above.

165. A verb may be irregular in one of two ways.
1. It may lack one or more of the moods, tenses, or persons of regular verbs, and then it is called a *defective verb* (from the Latin *defectivus* = defective, imperfect); or, 2. It may possess all these moods, tenses, or persons, but at the same time vary, so far as their formation is

concerned, from the prescribed rules; it is, then, an *irregular verb* properly so called.

The main characteristic which distinguishes the regular from the irregular verbs, is that in the former the stem remains invariable, whilst the endings *alone* change with the moods, tenses, and persons: *chant-er, chant-ons, chant-erai*; whereas, in the irregular verbs the stem is not uniformly written throughout all the tenses of the conjugation: *ten-ir, je tiens; voul-oir, veuillez, je veux; sav-oir, sus, sache*, etc.

1. First conjugation: ER.

166. Verbs like *mener* (=to lead), *lever* (=to raise), which have a mute *e* in the last syllable but one, take a grave accent over that *e* whenever it is followed by a mute syllable: *je mène* (=I lead), *il lèvera* (=he will raise). See § 24.

Most verbs, however, in *eler, eter*, like *appeler* (=to call), *jeter* (=to throw), double the *l* or *t*: *j'appelle* (=I call), *il jette* (=he throws). See § 24.

But *acheter* (=to buy), *celer* (=to conceal), *geler* (=to freeze), *modeler* (=to fashion), *peler* (=to peel), etc., take the grave accent, *j'achète* (=I buy), *il pèlera* (=he will peel).

The verbs having a close *é* before the final syllable change it into an open *è* before a consonant followed by an *e* mute, as *céder* (=to yield), *je cède* (=I yield), but those ending in *éger* keep the close *é*, as *protéger* (=to protect), *il me protège* (=he protects me).

167. The verbs ending in *cer* and *ger*, such as *percer* (=to pierce), *tracer* (=to trace), *manger* (=to eat), *loger* (=to lodge), keep their *c* and *g* soft before *a* and *o*, the former by taking a cedilla under the *c*: *nous perçons* (=we pierce), *il traça* (=he traced), the latter by adding an *e* mute after the *g*: *nous mangeons* (=we eat), *nous logeons* (=we lodge).

168. Verbs ending in *yer* change *y* into *i* before *e* mute: *essuyer* (=to wipe), *j'essuie* (=I wipe), *envoyer* (=to send), *ils envoient* (=they send).

For verbs ending in *ayer*, like *payer* (=to pay), *balayer* (=to sweep), the change is optional, but the *y* is more generally retained: *je paye* (=I pay).

169. The first conjugation has really only two irregular verbs: *aller* (=to go), and *envoyer* (=to send).

*** Aller** (=to go).

Prim. Tenses.	Aller, allant, allé, je vais, j'allai.
Ind. Pres.	Je vais, tu vas, il or elle va, nous allons, vous allez, ils or elles vont.
Imperf.	J'allais, etc., nous allions, etc.
Past Def.	J'allai, tu allas, il or elle alla, nous allâmes, vous allâtes, ils or elles allèrent.
Fut.	J'irai, tu iras, il or elle ira, nous irons, vous irez, ils or elles iront.
Cond. Pres.	J'irais, tu irais, il or elle irait, nous irions, vous iriez, ils or elles iraient.
Imper.	Va, allons, allez.
Subj. Pres.	Que j'aille, etc., que nous allions, que vous alliez, qu'ils or qu'elles aillent.
Imperf.	Que j'allasse, etc., que nous allussions, etc.
Impr.	Aller.
Part.	Allant, allé.

Conjugated with the auxiliary être.

S'en aller (=to go away) is conjugated in the same manner:—

Je m'en vais, tu t'en vas, etc. The compound tenses, *je m'en suis allé, que je m'en fusse allé, etc.*, ought to be thoroughly acquired by the pupils.

Envoyer (=to send).

Prim. Tenses.	Envoyer, envoyant, envoyé, j'envoie, j'envoyai.
Future.	J'enverrai; conditional, j'enverrais.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

2. Second conjugation in IR with Imperfect in ISSAIS.

170. This conjugation has but one irregular verb, and that only in the past participle. It is the verb **bénir**, the past participle of which can be spelt, according to the meaning, *béni* or *béni*: *béni*, in the case of things consecrated by the church, and *béni* in all other instances: *pain béni* (=consecrated bread), *nation bénie* (=blessed nation).

Fleurir (=to blossom, to flourish), has two forms, the one regular, *fleurissais, fleurissant*; the other irre-

gular, *florissais, florissant*;—*florissais, florissant* are the remains of the old verb *florir*.

Q. **Hair** (=to hate) takes no diæresis in the indicative present singular, and in the imperative (second person singular): *je hais, tu hais, il hait; hais*.

3. Second (direct) conjugation in **IR**.

171. We have seen (§ 181) that there are two regular conjugations in **ir**: the one (consisting of more than three hundred verbs) which places **iss** between the stem and the termination (*fin-iss-ais*); the other (composed only of about twenty verbs) which merely adds the simple termination *directly* to the stem (*je sent-ais*); we have left this latter one entirely aside in studying the formation of the simple tenses; we shall now study in detail each one of the verbs of which it consists, and we designate this conjugation by the name of *direct conjugation in ir*.

172. The verbs constituting the direct conjugation in **ir** are divided into three classes, according to the form of their past definite; *dormir* (=to sleep), *courir* (=to run), and *tenir* (=to hold), have for their respective past definites: *je dorm-**is**, je cour-**us**, je tin-**s***. Accordingly, the first class comprises all the verbs whose past definite is in **is**, the second is characterised by the ending of the same tense in **us**, and the third forms the past definite with the help of the root of the verb: *ten-**ir**, je tin-**s**, ven-**ir**, je vin-**s***.

The irregular verbs of the second conjugation are as follows:—

Acquérir (=to acquire).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	<i>Acquérir, acquérant, acquis, j'acquiers, j'acquies</i>
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	<i>J'acquiers, tu acquiers, il or elle acquiert, nous acquérons, vous acquérez, ils or elles acquièrent.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>J'acquiers, etc., nous acquiérons, etc.</i>
<i>Past Def.</i>	<i>J'acquis, etc., nous acquies, etc.</i>
<i>Fut.</i>	<i>J'acquerrai, tu acquerras, il or elle acquerra, nous acquerrons, vous acquerez, ils or elles acquerront.</i>
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	<i>J'acquerrais, etc., nous acquerrions, etc.</i>

<i>Imper.</i>	Acquiers, acquérons, acquérez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que j' acquière , que tu acquières , qu'il <i>or</i> qu'elle acquière , que nous acquérions , que vous acquériez , qu'ils <i>or</i> qu'elles acquiedent .
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que j' acquisse , etc., que nous acquissions , etc.
<i>Infim.</i>	Acquérir.
<i>Part.</i>	Acquérant, acquis, acquise.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Acquérir, mourir and courir have for their future respectively, **acquerrai, mourrai, courrai**; as **saillir** has in the future **saillera**, side by side with **saillira**, so, instead of **acquerrai, mourrai, courrai**, the old French had **acquéreraï, moureraï, coureraï**; then, later on, the *e* mute disappeared, and the contracted forms **acquerrai, mourrai, courrai**, prevailed. This explains also why the two *r*'s must be pronounced strongly. *cf. End - 1*

Bouillir (= to boil).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Bouillir, bouillant, bouilli, je bous, je bouillis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je bous, tu bous, il <i>or</i> elle bont, nous bouillons , vous bouillez, ils <i>or</i> elles bouillent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je bouillais, etc., nous bouillions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je bouillis, etc., nous bouillîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je bouillirai, etc., nous bouillirons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je bouillirais, nous bouillirions, etc.
<i>Imp.</i>	Bous, bouillons, bouillez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je bouille, que tu bouilles, qu'il <i>or</i> qu'elle bouille, que nous bouillions, que vous bouilliez, qu'ils <i>or</i> qu'elles bouillent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je bouillisse, etc., que nous bouillissions, etc.
<i>Infim.</i>	Bouillir.
<i>Part.</i>	Bouillant, bouilli, bouillie.

Conjugated with the auxiliary verb avoir.

N.B.—**Bouillir** is essentially a neuter verb, and *to boil*, used actively, is rendered by the verb *faire* (= to make) and **bouillir**, as: boil these vegetables = **faites bouillir ces légumes**.

Courir (= to run).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Courir, courant, couru, je cours, je cours.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je cours, tu cours, il <i>or</i> elle court, nous courons , vous courez, ils <i>or</i> elles courent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je courais, etc., nous courions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je courus, etc., nous courûmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je courrai , tu courras, il <i>or</i> elle courra, nous courrons, vous courez, ils <i>or</i> elles courront.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je courrais , etc., nous courrions, etc.
<i>Imp.</i>	Cours, courons, courez.

<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je coure, que tu coures, qu'il <i>or</i> qu'elle coure, que nous courions, que vous couriez qu'ils <i>or</i> qu'elles courent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je courusse, etc., que nous courussions, etc.
<i>Inf.</i>	Courir.
<i>Part.</i>	Courant, couru, courue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Besides *courir*, the old French had also the form *courre*, which still exists in the expression *chasse à courre* (*chasse à courir* = hunting); for the future *courrai*, see above, *acquérir*.

Couvrir (=to cover).

Prim. Tenses. Couvrir, couvrant, couvert, je couvre, je couvris.

See *offrir*. *Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

Cueillir (=to pluck).

Prim. Tenses. Cueillir, cueillant, cueilli, je cueille, je cueillis.

Ind. Pres. Je cueille, tu cueilles, il *or* elle cueille, nous cueillons, vous cueillez, ils *or* elles cueillent.

Imperf. Je cueillais, etc., nous cueillions, etc.

Past Def. Je cueillis, etc., nous cueillîmes, etc.

Fut.

Je cueillerai, etc., nous cueillerons, etc.

Cond. Pres. Je cueillerais, etc., nous cueillerions, etc.

Imper.

Cueille, cueillons, cueillez.

Sub. Pres. Que je cueille, etc., que nous cueillions, etc.

Imperf.

Que je cueillisse, etc., que nous cueillissions, etc.

Inf.

Cueillir.

Part.

Cueillant, cueilli, cueillie.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

For the future *cueillerai*, see *acquérir*.

Dormir (=to sleep).

Prim. Tenses. Dormir, dormant, dormi, je dors, je dormis.

See *mentir*. *Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

Faillir (=to fail).

Several tenses of this verb, such as the *Indicative Present*, *Imperfect*, and *Future*, are seldom used.

Prim. Tenses. Faillir, faillant, failli, je faux, je faillis.

Ind. Pres. Je faux, tu faux, il *or* elle faut, nous faillons, vous failliez, ils *or* elles faillent.

Imperf. Je faillais, tu faillais, il *or* elle faillait, nous faillions, vous failliez, ils *or* elles faillaient.

Past Def. Je faillis, etc., nous faillîmes, etc.

Fut.	Je faillirai, etc., nous faillirons, etc.
Cond. Pres.	Je faillirais, etc., nous faillirions, etc.
Imper.	Faillie, . . failliez.
Subj. Pres.	Que je faillie, etc., que nous faillions, etc.
Imperf.	Que je faillisie, etc., que nous faissions, etc.
Infinitive.	Faillir.
Part.	Faillant, failli.

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

The first three persons of the singular, *je fais, tu fais, il fait* have fallen almost entirely into disuse; the expression is, however, still met with: *le cœur me fait* (*me manque*) = my heart fails me. The *Pres. Part.* also is obsolete.

Féris (= to strike) has preserved only the past participle *féru*.

It survives in the expression *sans coup féris* (= without striking a blow): *d'Harcourt prit Turin sans coup féris* (= d'Harcourt took Turin without striking a blow).

Fuir (= to flee).

Prim. Tenses.	Fuir, fuyant, fui, je fuis, je fuis.
Ind. Pres.	Je fuis, tu fuis, il or elle fuit, nous fuyons, vous fuyez, ils or elles fuient.
Imperf.	Je fuyais, etc., nous fuyions, etc.
Past Def.	Je fuis, etc., nous fuimes, etc.
Fut.	Je fuirai, etc., nous fuirons, etc.
Cond. Pres.	Je fuirais, etc., nous fuirions, etc.
Imper.	Fuis, fuyons, fuyez.
Subj. Pres.	Que je fuie, etc., que nous fuyions, que vous fuyiez, qu'ils or qu'elles fuient.
Imperf.	Que je fuissie, etc., que nous fuissions, etc.
Infinitive.	Fuir.
Part.	Fuyant, fui, fuie.

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

Gésir (*être couché* = to lie down).

This verb is no longer used in the infinitive; the following are the only parts employed: *Il gît, nous gisons, il gisent; il gisait, gisant. Ci-gît* (= here lies) is used in epitaphs.

Mentir (= to tell lies).

Prim. Tenses.	Mentir, mentant, menti, je mens, je mentis.
Ind. Pres.	Je mens, tu mens, il or elle ment, nous mentons, vous mentez, ils or elles mentent.
Imperf.	Je mentais, etc., nous mentions, etc.
Past Def.	Je mentis, etc., nous mentimes, etc.
Fut.	Je mentirai, etc., nous mentirons, etc.

Cond. Pres.	Je mentirais, etc., nous mentirions, etc.
Imper.	Mens, mentons, mentez.
Subj. Pres.	Que je mente, etc., que nous mentionnions, etc.
Imperf.	Que je mentisse, etc., que nous mentissions, etc.
Infinit.	Mentir.
Part.	Mentant, menti.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Mourir (=to die).

Prim. Tenses.	Mourir, mourant, mort, je meurs, je mourus.
Indic. Pres.	Je meurs, tu meurs, il or elle meurt, nous mourons, vous mourez, ils or elles meurent.
Imperf.	Je mourais, etc., nous mourions, etc.
Past Def.	Je mourus, etc., nous mourûmes, etc.
Fut.	Je mourrai, etc., nous mourrons, etc.
Cond. Pres.	Je mourrais, etc., nous mourrions, etc.
Imper.	Meurs, mourons, mourez.
Subj. Pres.	Que je meure, etc., que nous mourions, que vous mouriez, qu'ils meurent.
Imperf.	Que je mourusse, etc., que nous mourussions, etc.
Infinit.	Mourir.
Part.	Mourant, mort, morte.

Conjugated with the auxiliary être.

For the future mourrai, see above acquérir.

✦ **Offrir** (=to offer).

Prim. Tenses.	Offrir, offrant, offert, j'offre, j'offris.
Ind. Pres.	J'offre, tu offres, il or elle offre, nous offrons, vous offrez, ils or elles offrent.
Imperf.	J'offrais, etc., nous offrions, etc.
Past Def.	J'offris, etc., nous offrîmes, etc.
Fut.	J'offrirai, etc., nous offrirons, etc.
Cond. Pres.	J'offrirais, etc., nous offririons, etc.
Imper.	Offre, offrons, offrez.
Subj. Pres.	Que j'offre, etc., que nous offrions, etc.
Imperf.	Que j'offrisse, etc., que nous offrissions, etc.
Infinit.	Offrir.
Part.	Offrant, offert, offerte.

~~✦~~ *Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.* + ✕ + 1 - 1 - 1

Oùir (=to hear).

This verb is used only in the *Inf. Pres.*, oùir; the *Part. Past.*, ouï; the *Past Def.*, j'ouïs, tu ouïs, etc.; the *Imperf. Subj.* que j'ouïsse, que tu ouïsses, etc. *Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

The past participle subsists in law language: *ouïe la lecture de l'arrêt* (la lecture de l'arrêt entendue) = the reading of the sentence being heard.

+

Ouvrir (=to open).*Prim. Tenses.* Ouvrir, ouvrant, ouvert, j'ouvre, j'ouvrirai.See *ouvrir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.+ **Partir** (=to set out).*Prim. Tenses.* Partir, partant, parti, je pars, je partirai.See *mentir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary ~~**être**~~ ++ **Saillir** (=to jump, to gush) is conjugated like *finir*, but when it means to jut out it has :—*Prim. Tenses.* Saillir, saillant, sailli, il saille, and the future is saillira.See *tressaillir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.+ **Sentir** (=to feel).*Prim. Tenses.* Sentir, sentant, senti, je sens, je sentis.See *mentir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.+ **Servir** (=to serve).*Prim. Tenses.* Servir, servant, servi, je sers, je servirai.See *mentir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.+ **Sortir** (=to go out).*Prim. Tenses.* Sortir, sortant, sorti, je sors, je sortirai.See *mentir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **être**.+ **Souffrir** (=to suffer).*Prim. Tenses.* Souffrir, souffrant, souffert, je souffre, je souffrirai.See *offrir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.**Tenir** (=to hold).*Prim. Tenses.* Tenir, tenant, tenu, je tiens, je tiens.See *venir*. Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.**Tressaillir** (=to start).*Prim. Tenses.* Tressaillir, tressaillant, tressailli, je tressaille, je tressaillirai.*Ind. Pres.* Je tressaille, tu tressailles, il tressaille, nous tressaillons, vous tressaillez, ils tressaillent.*Imperf.* Je tressaillais, etc., nous tressaillions, etc.*Past Def.* Je tressaillis, etc., nous tressaillîmes, etc.*Fut.* Je tressaillirai, etc., nous tressaillirons, etc.*Cond. Pres.* Je tressaillirais, etc., nous tressaillirions, etc.*Imper.* Tressaille, tressaillons, tressaillez.

<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je tressaille, etc., que nous tressaillions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je tressaillisse, etc., que nous tressaissions, etc.
<i>Infjn.</i>	Tressaillir.
<i>Part.</i>	Tressaillant, tressailli.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Venir (= to come).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Venir, venant, venu, je viens, je vins.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je viens, tu viens, il or elle vient, nous venons, vous venez, ils or elles viennent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je venais, etc., nous venions, etc.
<i>Past. Def.</i>	Je vins, etc., nous vîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je viendrai, etc., nous viendrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je viendrais, etc., nous viendrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Viens, venons, venez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je vienne, etc., que nous venions, que vous veniez, qu'ils or qu'elles viennent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je vinsse, etc., que nous vissions, etc.
<i>Infjn.</i>	Venir.
<i>Part.</i>	Venant, venu, venue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary être.

Vêtir (= to clothe).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Vêtant, vêtu, je vêts, je vêtis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je vêts, tu vêts, il or elle vêt, nous vêtions, vous vêtez, ils or elles vêtent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je vêtis, etc., nous vêtions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je vêtis, etc., nous vêtîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je vêtirai, etc., nous vêtirons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je vêtirais, etc., nous vêtirions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Vêts, vêtions, vêtez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je vête, etc., que nous vêtions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je vêtisse, etc., que nous vêtissions, etc.
<i>Infjn.</i>	Vêtir.
<i>Part.</i>	Vêtant, vêtu, vêtue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

4. Third Conjugation: OIR.

173. The irregular verbs in *oir* are subdivided into two classes:—

1. The first forms its past definite in *us*, and its participle in *u*: *valoir* (= to be worth), *valus*, *valu*.

2. The second class comprises the two verbs *asseoir* (= to sit), and *voir* (= to see), forming their past definite

in **is** (*assis, vis*), but differing from each other in the past participle (*assis, vu*).

174. The irregular verbs of the third conjugation are the following :—

Asseoir (=to seat, to place, to sit).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Asseoir, asseyant, assis, j'assieds, j'assis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	J'assieds, tu assieds, il assied, nous asseyons, vous asseyez, ils asseyent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	J'asseyais, etc., nous asseyions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	J'assis, etc., nous assimes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	J'assiérai, etc., nous assiérons, etc.; the French also say: j'asseyerai, etc., nous asseyerons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	J'assiérais, etc., nous assiérions, etc.; also: j'asseyerais, etc., nous asseyerions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Assieds, asseyons, asseyez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que j'asseye, etc., que nous asseyions, que vous asseyiez, qu'ils asseyent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que j'assisse, etc., que nous assissions, etc.
<i>Inf.</i>	Asseoir.
<i>Past.</i>	Asseyant, assis, assise.

The verb *asseoir* is also conjugated as follows :—

<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	J'assois, tu assois, il assoit, nous asseyons, vous asseyez, ils assoient.
<i>Imperf.</i>	J'asseyais, etc.

But this manner is not used in written language.

The verb *surseoir* (=to postpone) follows this second form.

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**; but it takes the auxiliary **être** when used as a reflexive verb: *s'asseoir* (=to sit down).

Choir (*tomber* =to fall).

Employed only in the infinitive, and in a limited number of instances.

In the old French it was conjugated throughout (*chois, chéats, cherrai, chut, chéant, chu*). Even as late as the seventeenth century we find the future *cherrai*: *Tirez la chevillette, et la bobinette cherra* (=pull the peg and the bobbin will fall). **PERRAULT.**

The past participle *chu* (=tombé) has given the feminine substantive *chute*, just as the past participles *entrée, revue, battue* have given, respectively, the substantives: *une entrée, une revue, une battue*.

Déchoir (=to decay, fall).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Déchoir, déchu, je déchois, je déchus.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je déchois, tu déchois, il déchoit, nous déchoyons, vous déchoyez, ils déchoint.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je déchoyais, etc., nous déchoyions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je déchus, etc., nous déchûmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je décherrai, etc., nous décherrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je décherrais, etc., nous décherrions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Déchois, déchoyons, déchoyez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je déchoe, etc., que nous déchoyions, que vous déchoyiez, qu'ils déchoint.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je déchusse, etc., que nous déchussions, etc.
<i>Infin.</i>	Déchoir.
<i>Part.</i>	(no <i>Pres. Part.</i>) déchu, déchue.

Conjugated with **avoir** when it expresses an action, and with **être** when it denotes a state.

Échoir (=to fall due).

Prim. Tenses : échoir, échéant, échu, il échoit, j'échus.

Conjugated as *déchoir*.—Used only in the *Part. Pres.*, échéant; the *Part. Past*, échu; the *Indic. Pres.*, third person singular, il échoit (pronounced and often written *échet*); the *Past Def.*, j'échus, etc.; the *Fut.*, j'écherrai, etc.; the *Cond. Pres.*, j'écherrais, etc.; the *Imperf. Subj.*, que j'échusse, etc.

See *déchoir*. Conjugated with **avoir** or **être**.

From the *Pres. Part.* *échéant* comes the feminine substantive *échéance*, just as *vengeant*, *surveillant* have formed *vengeance*, *surveillance*. (See § 44.)

Falloir (=to be necessary).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Falloir, fallu, il faut, il fallut.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Il faut.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Il fallait.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Il fallut.
<i>Fut.</i>	Il faudra.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Il faudrait.
<i>Imperf.</i>	(None.)
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Qu'il faille.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Qu'il fallût.
<i>Infin.</i>	Falloir.
<i>Part.</i>	(no <i>Pres. Part.</i>) fallu.

Conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**

Mouvoir (=to move).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Mouvoir, mouvant, mû, je meus, je mus.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je meus, tu meus, il meut, nous mouvons, vous mouvez, ils meuvent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je mouvais, etc., nous mouvions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je mus, etc., nous mûmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je mouvrai, etc., nous mouvrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je mouvrais, etc., nous mouvriions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Meus, mouvons, mouvez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je meuve, que tu meuves, qu'il meuve, que nous mouvions, que vous mouviez, qu'ils meuvent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je musse, etc., que nous mussions, etc.
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Mouvoir.
<i>Part.</i>	Mouvant, mû, mue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Pleuvoir (=to rain).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Pleuvoir, pleuvant, plu, il pleut, il plut.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Il pleut.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Il pleuvait.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Il plut.
<i>Fut.</i>	Il pleuvra.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Il pleuvrait.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Qu'il pleuve.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Qu'il plût.
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Pleuvoir.
<i>Part.</i>	Pleuvant, plu.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Pouvoir (=to be able).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Pouvoir, pouvant, pu, je peux or je puis, je pus.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je peux or je puis*, tu peux, il peut, nous pouvons, vous pouvez, ils peuvent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je pouvais, etc., nous pouvions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je pus, etc., nous pûmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je pourrai, etc., nous pourrons, etc.†
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je pourrais, etc., nous pourrions, etc.†
<i>Imper.</i>	(None).
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je puisse, etc., que nous puissions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je pusse, etc., que nous pussions, etc.
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Pouvoir.
<i>Part.</i>	Pouvant, pu.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

**Puis* is the only form used in the interrogative conjugation (for the first person), *Puis-je ?* (=can I ?)

† The two *r*'s sounded only as one, whilst in *acquerrai*, etc., both are sounded strongly.

Savoir (=to know).

Prim. Tenses. Savoir, sachant, su, je sais, je sus.

Ind. Pres. Je sais, tu sais, il sait, nous savons, vous savez, ils savent.

Imperf. Je savais, etc., nous savions, etc.

Past Def. Je sus, etc., nous sûmes, etc.

Fut. Je saurai, etc., nous saurons, etc.

Cond. Pres. Je saurais, etc., nous saurions, etc.

Imper. Sache, sachez, sachez.

Subj. Pres. Que je sache, etc., que nous sachions, etc.

Imperf. Que je sussse, etc., que nous sussissions, etc.

Infinitive. Savoir.

Part. Sachant, su, sue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

In the Old French, *savoir* was *saver*, from the Latin *sapere*. This form *saver* gave the future *saver-ai*, which, contracted later into *savrai* (as *recevoir* into *recevrai*, *devoir* into *devrai*, etc.), became in the fourteenth century *saurai*, as *habere* has given *aver-ai*, then *avrai*, and finally *aurai*.

Seoir.

In the sense of to be seated (=être assis) this verb is obsolete. It is sometimes used in the present participle, *séant*, and the past participle, *sis*, *sise*. When meaning to be becoming (=être convenable) it is still used in certain tenses, and always in the third person singular or plural: *il sied*, *ils siègent*, *il seyait*, *il siéra*.

Valoir (=to be worth).

Prim. Tenses. Valoir, valant, valu, je vauz, je valus.

Ind. Pres. Je vauz, tu vauz, il vaut, nous valons, vous valez, ils valent.

Imperf. Je valais, etc., nous valions, etc.

Past Def. Je valus, etc., nous valûmes, etc.

Fut. Je vaudrai, etc., nous vaudrons, etc.

Cond. Pres. Je vaudrais, nous vaudrions, etc.

Imper. Vauz, valons, valez.

Subj. Pres. Que je vaille, que tu vailles, qu'il vaille, que nous valions, que vous valiez, qu'ils valient.

Imperf. Que je valusse, etc., que nous valussions, etc.

Infinitive. Valoir.

Part. Valant, valu.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

The compounds of this verb are conjugated in the same manner, with the exception of *prévaloir* (=to prevail), whose *Subj. Pres.* is: *que je prévienne*, etc., *que nous prévalions*, etc. X

Voir (=to see).*Prim. Tenses.* Voir, voyant, vu, je vois, je vis.*Ind. Pres.* Je vois, tu vois, il voit, nous voyons, vous voyez, ils voient.*Imperf.* Je voyais, etc., nous voyions, etc.*Past Def.* Je vis, etc., nous vîmes, etc.*Fut.* Je verrai, etc., nous verrons,* etc.*Cond. Pres.* Je verrais, etc., nous verrions,* etc.*Imper.* Vois, voyons, voyez.*Subj. Pres.* Que je voie, etc., que nous voyions, etc.*Imperf.* Que je visse, etc., que nous vissions, etc.*Inf.* Voir.*Part.* Voyant, vu, vue.*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

N.B.—*Pouvoir* (=to provide), and *prévoir* (=to foresee), make in the *Fut.* and *Cond.*: *je pourvoirai*, *je pourvoirais*, and *je prévoirai*, *je prévoirais*. Besides, the *Past Def.* and *Imperf. Subj.* of *pouvoir* are *je pourvus*, *que je pourrussé*.

*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.***Vouloir** (=to will, to be willing).*Prim. Tenses.* Vouloir, voulant, voulu, je veux, je voulais.*Ind. Pres.* Je veux, tu veux, il veut, nous voulons, vous voulez, ils veulent.*Imperf.* Je voulais, etc., nous voulions, etc.*Past Def.* Je voulus, etc., nous voulûmes, etc.*Fut.* Je voudrai, etc., nous voudrions, etc.*Cond. Pres.* Je voudrais, etc., nous voudrions, etc.*Imper.* Veuille, veuillons, veuillez. (*The Imper. proper*, *veux*, *voulons*, *voulez*, is seldom used).*Subj. Pres.* Que je veuille, etc., que nous voulions, que vous vouliez, qu'ils veuillent.*Imperf.* Que je voulusse, etc., que nous voulussions, etc.*Inf.* Vouloir.*Part.* Voulant, voulu, voulue.*Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.***5. Fourth Conjugation: RE.**

175. The irregular verbs in *re* may be subdivided into two classes according to the formation of the past definite: 1. Verbs with the past definite in *is*: *craindre* (=to fear), *crainis*; 2. Verbs with the past definite in *us*: *connaître* (=to know), *connus*.

* See Note on *pouvoir*.

176. The irregular verbs in **re** are the following:—

Absoudre (= to absolve).

Prim. Tenses. Absoudre, absolvant, absous (*fem.* absoute), j'absous;
no Past Definite. See résoudre.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Boire (= to drink).

Prim. Tenses. Boire, buvant, bu, je bois, je bus.

Ind. Pres. Je bois, tu bois, il boit, nous buvons, vous buvez,
ils boivent.

Imperf. Je buvais, etc., nous buvions, etc.

Past Def. Je bus, etc., nous bûmes, etc.

Fut. Je boirai, etc., nous boirons, etc.

Cond. Pres. Je boirais, etc., nous boirions, etc.

Imper. Bois, buvons, buvez.

Subj. Pres. Que je boive, etc., que nous buvions, que vous buviez,
qu'ils boivent.

Imperf. Que je busse, etc., que nous bussions, etc.

Inf. Boire.

Pa. t. Buvant, bu, bué.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Braire (= to bray).

This verb, according to the *Académie*, is used only in the *Infinitive*, and in the third person of the *Present Indicative*, *Future*, and *Conditional*: braire, il brait, ils braient, il braira, ils brairont, il brairait, ils brairaient.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Braire, in the old language, had the general sense of *crier* (= to shout), and was applied to men as well as to animals; it is only at a comparatively recent period that the meaning was limited to the noise made by an ass.

Bruire (= to roar, rattle, resound).

This verb has only the following forms: bruire, il bruit, il bruyait, ils bruyaient. *Bruyant* now is rather an adjective than a present participle.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Clore (= to close).

Used only in the *Past Participle*, clos, close; the three persons singular of the *Ind. Pres.*, je clos, tu clos, il clôt; the *Fut.*, je clorai, tu cloras, etc.; the *Cond. Pres.*, je clorais, etc.; the *Imper.* singular, clos; *Subj. Pres.*, que je close; and all compound tenses.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Conclure (= to conclude).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Conclure, concluant, conclu, je conclus, je conclus.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je conclus, tu conclus, il conclut, nous concluons, vous concluez, ils concluent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je concluais, etc., nous concluions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je conclus, etc., nous conclûmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je conclurai, etc., nous conclurons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je conclurais, etc., nous conclurions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Conclus, concluons, concluez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je conclue, etc., que nous concluions, que vous concluez, qu'ils concluent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je conclusse, etc., que nous conclusions, etc.
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Conclure.
<i>Part.</i>	Concluant, conclu, conclue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Conduire (= to conduct).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Conduire, conduisant, conduit, je conduis, je conduis.
----------------------	---

See nuire. Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Confire (= to pickle).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Confire, confisant, confit, je confis, je confis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je confis, tu confis, il confit, nous confisons, vous confisez, ils confisent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je confisais, etc., nous confisions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je confis, etc., nous confimes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je confirai, etc., nous confirons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je confirais, etc., nous confirions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Confis, confisons, confisez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je confise, etc., que nous confisions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	(None.)
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Confire.
<i>Part.</i>	Confisant, confit, confite.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Connaitre (= to know).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Connaitre, connaissant, connu, je connais, je connais.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je connais, tu connais, il connaît, nous connaissons, vous connaissez, ils connaissent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je connaissais, etc., nous connaissions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je connus, etc., nous connûmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je connaîtrai, etc., nous connaîtrons, etc.

<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je connaîtrais, etc., nous connaîtrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Connais, connaissons, connaissez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je connaisse, etc., que nous connaissions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je connusse, etc., que nous connussions, etc.
<i>Inf.</i>	Connaitre.
<i>Part.</i>	Connaisant, connu, connue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

N.B.—Whenever the vowel **i** is followed by **t** in this verb, it takes the circumflex accent: *connait, connaîtraî*, etc.

Coudre (=to sew).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Coudre, cousant, cousu, je couds, je cousis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je couds, tu couds, il coud, nous cousons, vous cousez, ils cousent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je cousais, etc., nous cousions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je cousis, etc., nous cousîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je coudrai, etc., nous coudrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je coudrais, etc., nous coudrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Couds, cousons, cousez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je couse, etc., que nous cousions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je cousisse, etc., que nous cousissions, etc.
<i>Inf.</i>	Coudre.
<i>Part.</i>	Cousant, cousu, cousue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Craindre (=to fear).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Craindre, craignant, craint, je crains, je craignis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je crains, tu crains, il craint, nous craignons, vous craignez, ils craignent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je craignais, etc., nous craignions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je craignis, etc., nous craignîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je craindrai, etc., nous craindrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je craindrais, etc., nous craindrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Crains, craignons, craignez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je craigne, etc., que nous craignions, que vous craigniez, qu'ils craignent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je craignisse, etc., que nous craignissions, etc.
<i>Inf.</i>	Craindre.
<i>Part.</i>	Craignant, craint, crainte.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Croire (=to believe).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Croire, croyant, cru, je crois, je crus.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je crois, tu crois, il croit, nous croyons, vous croyez, ils croient.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je croyais, etc. nous croyions, etc.

<i>Past. Def.</i>	Je crus, etc., nous crûmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je croirai, etc., nous croirons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je croirais, etc., nous croirions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Crois, croyons, croyez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je croie, etc., que nous croyions, que vous croyiez, qu'ils croient.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je crusse, etc., que nous crussions, etc.
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Croire.
<i>Part.</i>	Croyant, cru, crue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Croître (= to grow).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Croître, croissant, crû, je crois, je crus.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je crois, tu crois, il croit, nous croissons, vous croissez, ils croissent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je croissais, etc., nous croissions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je crûs, etc., nous crûmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je croîtrai, etc., nous croîtrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je croitrais, etc., nous croitrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Crois, croissons, croissez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je croisse, etc., que nous croissions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je crusse, etc., que nous crussions, etc.
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Croître.
<i>Part.</i>	Croissant, crû, crue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

N.B.—See *connaître*.

Dire (= to say).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Dire, disant, dit, je dis, je dis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je dis, tu dis, il dit, nous disons, vous dites, ils disent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je disais, etc., nous disions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je dis, etc., nous dîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je dirai, etc., nous dirons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je dirais, etc., nous dirions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Dis, disons, dites.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je dise, etc., que nous disions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je disse, etc., que nous dissions, etc.
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Dire.
<i>Part.</i>	Disant, dit, dite.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

N.B.—All the compounds of *dire* make *dites* in the second person plural of the *Pres. Indic.*, with the exception of *redire* (= to repeat), and *maudire* (= to curse), which make *redites*, *maudisses*.

Éclore (= to be hatched, to open, to dawn). — Limited to the following forms:—

<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Il éclôt, ils éclosent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Il éclôra, ils éclôront.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Il éclôrait, ils éclôraient.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Qu'il éclose, qu'ils éclosent.
<i>Infîn.</i>	Éclore.
<i>Part. Past.</i>	Éclosant, éclos, éclosé.

Conjugated with the auxiliary être.

Écrire (= to write).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Écrire, écrivant, écrit, j'écris, j'écrivis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	J'écris, tu écris, il écrit, nous écrivons, vous écrivez, ils écrivent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	J'écrivais, etc., nous écrivions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	J'écrivis, etc., nous écrivîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	J'écrirai, etc., nous écrirons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	J'écrirais, etc., nous écririons, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Écris, écrivons, écrivez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que j'écrive, etc., que nous écrivions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que j'écrivisse, etc., que nous écrivissions, etc.
<i>Infîn.</i>	Écrire.
<i>Part.</i>	Écrivant, écrit, écrite.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Faire (= to make or to do).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Faire, faisant, fait, je fais, je fis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je fais, tu fais, il fait, nous faisons, vous faites, ils font.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je faisais, etc., nous faisions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je fis, etc., nous fîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je ferai, etc., nous ferons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je ferais, etc., nous ferions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Fais, faisons, faites.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je fasse, etc., que nous fassions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je fisse, etc., que nous fissions, etc.
<i>Infîn.</i>	Faire.
<i>Part.</i>	Faisant, fait, faite.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Frire (= to fry).

This verb, besides the *Infîn. Pres.*, has also the three persons singular of the *Ind. Pres.*, je fris, tu frit, il frit; the *Fut.*, je

frirai, etc.; the *Cond. Pres.*, *je frirais*, etc.; the second person singular of the *Imper.*, *fris*; the *Part. Past.*, *frit*, *frite*.

The tenses of this verb are more generally made up by placing the verb *faire* before the infinitive *frir*: *nous faisons frir*, *vous faites frir*.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Joindre (=to join).

Prim. Tenses. Joindre, joignant, joint, je joins, je joins.

See *craindre*. *Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.*

Lire (=to read).

Prim. Tenses. Lire, lisant, lu, je lis, je lis.

Ind. Pres. Je lis, tu lis, il lit, nous lisons, vous lisez, ils lisent.

Imperf. Je lisais, etc., nous lisions, etc.

Past Def. Je lus, etc., nous lûmes, etc.

Fut. Je lirai, etc., nous lirons, etc.

Cond. Pres. Je lirais, etc., nous lirions, etc.

Imper. Lis, lisons, lisez.

Subj. Pres. Que je lise, etc., que nous lisions, etc.

Imperf. Que je lusse, etc., que nous lussions, etc.

Inf. Lire.

Part. Lisant, lu, lue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Luire (=to shine).

Prim. Tenses. Luire, luisant, lui, je luis, je luis.

Ind. Pres. Je luis, tu luis, il luit, nous luisons, vous lisez, ils luisent.

Imperf. Je luisais, etc., nous luisions, etc.

Past Def. Je luisis, etc., nous luisîmes, etc.*

Fut. Je luirai, etc., nous luirons, etc.

Cond. Pres. Je luirais, etc., nous luirions, etc.

Imper. Lue, luisons, lue.

Subj. Pres. Que je lue, etc., que nous luisions, etc.

Imperf. Que je luisisse, etc., que nous luisissions etc.

Inf. Luire.

Part. Luisant, lui.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

* This tense, which the *Académie* does not give, is very seldom used. It is to be found in Bossuet.

Mettre (=to place, to put).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Mettro, mettant, mis, je mets, je mis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je mets, tu mets, il met, nous mettons, vous mettez, ils mettent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je mettais, etc., nous mettions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je mis, etc., nous mîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je mettrai, etc., nous mettrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je mettrais, etc., nous mettrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Mets, mettons, mettez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je mette, etc., que nous mettions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je misse, etc., que nous missions, etc.
<i>Infin.</i>	Mettre.
<i>Part.</i>	Mettant, mis, mise.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Moudre (=to grind).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Moudre, moulant, moulu, je mouds, je moulus.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je mouds, tu mouds, il moud, nous moulons, vous moulez, ils moulent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je moulais, etc., nous moulions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je moulus, etc., nous moulûmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je moudrai, etc., nous moudrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je moudrais, etc., nous moudrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Mouds, moulons, moulez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je moule, etc., que nous moulions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je moulusse, etc., que nous moulussions, etc.
<i>Infin.</i>	Moudre.
<i>Part.</i>	Moulant, moulu, moulue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Naître (=to be born).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Naître, naissant, né, je nais, je naquis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je nais, tu nais, il naît, nous naissons, vous naissez, ils naissent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je naissais, etc., nous naissions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je naquis, etc., nous naquîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je naîtrai, etc., nous naîtrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je naîtrais, etc., nous naîtrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Nais, naissons, naissez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je naisse, etc., que nous naissions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je naquiesse, etc., que nous naquissions, etc.
<i>Infin.</i>	Naître.
<i>Part.</i>	Naissant, né, née.

See connaître. Conjugated with the auxiliary être.

Nuire (=to injure, to be hurtful).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Nuire, nuisant, nul, je nuis, je nuisis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je nuis, tu nuis, il nuit, nous nuisons, vous nuisez, ils nuisent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je nuisais, etc., nous nuisions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je nuisis, etc., nous nuisîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je nuirai, etc., nous nuirons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je nuirais, etc., nous nuirions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Nuis, nuisons, nuisez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je nuise, etc., que nous nuisions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je nuisisse, etc., que nous nuisissions, etc.
<i>Infim.</i>	Nuire.
<i>Part.</i>	Nuisant, nul.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Oindre (=to anoint).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Oindre, oignant, oint, j'oins, j'oignis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	J'oins, etc., nous oignons, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	J'oignais, etc., nous oignions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	J'oignis, etc., nous oignîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	J'oindrai, etc., nous oindrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	J'oindrais, etc., nous oindrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Oins, oignons, oignez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que j'oigne, etc., que nous oignions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que j'oignisse, etc., que nous oignissions, etc.
<i>Infim.</i>	Oindre.
<i>Part.</i>	Oint, ointe.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

This verb is seldom used, except in the *Pres. Infim.*, the *Participles*, and the *Future*.

Paitre (=to graze).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Paitre, paissant, —, je pais, —.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	je pais, tu pais, il pait, nous paissions, vous paissez, ils paissent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je paissais, etc., nous paissions, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je paîtrai, etc., nous paîtrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je paîtrais, etc., nous paîtrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Pais, paissions, païssez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je païsse, etc., que nous paissions, etc.
<i>Infim.</i>	Paitre.
<i>Part.</i>	Paissant.

This verb has neither *Past Def.*, *Imperf. Subjunctive*, nor *Past Participle*.

Repaitre is conjugated like *paître*; but it has both a *Past Def.*: *je repus*, and a *Past Participle*: *repu*.

The simple participle **pu** is still used as a term of falconry: *un faucon qui a pu* (= a hawk which has been fed).

Paraître (= to appear).

Prim. Tenses. *Paraître, paraissant, paru, je paraissais, je parus.*
See *connaître*.

Peindre (= to paint).

Prim. Tenses. *Peindre, peignant, peint, je peignais, je peignis.*
See *craindre*.

Plaire (= to please).

Prim. Tenses. *Plaire, plaisant, plu, je plais, je plus.*
Ind. Pres. *Je plais, tu plais, il plaît, nous plaisons, vous plaisez, ils plaisent.*
Imperf. *Je plaisais, etc., nous plaisions, etc.*
Past Def. *Je plus, etc., nous plûmes, etc.*
Fut. *Je plairai, etc., nous plairons, etc.*
Cond. Pres. *Je plairais, etc., nous plairions, etc.*
Imper. *Plais, plaisons, plaisez.*
Subj. Pres. *Que je plaise, etc., que nous plaisions, etc.*
Imperf. *Que je plusse, etc., que nous plussions, etc.*
Infinitive. *Plaire.*
Part. *Plaisant, plu.*

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Prendre (= to take).

Prim. Tenses. *Prendre, prenant, pris, je prends, je pris.*
Ind. Pres. *Je prends, tu prends, il prend, nous prenons, vous prenez, ils prennent.*
Imperf. *Je prenais, etc., nous prenions, etc.*
Past Def. *Je pris, etc., nous primes, etc.*
Fut. *Je prendrai, etc., nous prendrons, etc.*
Cond. Pres. *Je prendrais, etc., nous prendrions, etc.*
Imper. *Prends, prenons, prenez.*
Subj. Pres. *Que je prenne, etc., que nous prenions, que vous preniez, qu'ils prennent.*
Imperf. *Que je prisse, etc., que nous prissions, etc.*
Infinitive. *Prendre.*
Part. *Prenant, pris, prise.*

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Résoudre (=to resolve).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Résoudre, résolvant, résolu, je résous, je résous, je résous.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je résous, tu résous, il résout, nous résolvons, vous résolvez, ils résolvent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je résolvais, etc., nous résolvions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je résolus, etc., nous résolûmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je résoudrai, etc., nous résoudrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je résoudrais, etc., nous résoudrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Résous, résolvons, résolvez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je résolve, etc., que nous résolvions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je résolusse, etc., que nous résolussions, etc.
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Résoudre.
<i>Part.</i>	Résolvant, résolu, résolue; or résous; we still say, <i>brouillard résous en pluie</i> (=a fog resolved into rain).

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Rire (=to laugh).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Rire, riant, ri, je ris, je ris
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je ris, tu ris, il rit, nous rions, vous riez, ils rient.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je riaais, etc., nous riions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je ris, etc., nous rimes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je rirai, etc., nous rirons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je rirais, etc., nous ririons, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Ris, rions, riez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je rie, que tu ries, qu'il rie, que nous riions, que vous riez, qu'ils rient.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je risse, etc., que nous rissions, etc.
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Rire.
<i>Part.</i>	Riant, ri.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Suivre (=to follow).

<i>Prim. Tenses.</i>	Suivre, suivant, suivi, je suis, je suis.
<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	Je suis, tu suis, il suit, nous suivons, vous suivez, ils suivent.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Je suivais, etc., nous suivions, etc.
<i>Past Def.</i>	Je suivis, etc., nous suivîmes, etc.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je suivrai, etc., nous suivrons, etc.
<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je suivrais, nous suivrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Suis, suivons, suivez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je suive, etc., que nous suivions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je suivisse, etc., que nous suivissions, etc.
<i>Infinitive.</i>	Suivre.
<i>Part.</i>	Suivant, suivi, suivie.

Conjugated with the auxiliary avoir.

Taire (=to keep silent, to conceal).

Prim. Tenses. Taire, taisant, tâ, je tais, je tus.

See *plaire*. Conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*.

Se taire (=to hold one's tongue), being a reflexive verb, is conjugated with *être* in its compound tenses.

Traire (=to milk).

Prim. Tenses. Traire, trayant, trait, je trais, no *Past. Def.*

Ind. Pres. Je trais, tu trais, il trait, nous trayons, vous trayez, ils traient.

Imperf. Je trayais, etc., nous trayions, etc.

Fut. Je trairai, etc., nous trairons, etc.

Cond. Pres. Je trairais, etc., nous trairions, etc.

Imper. Trais, trayons, trayez.

Subj. Pres. Que je traie, etc., que nous trayions, que vous trayiez, qu'ils traient.

Inf. Traire.

Part. Trayant, trait, traite.

This verb has neither *Past Def.*, nor *Imperf. Subj.*

Conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*.

Vaincre (=to conquer).

Prim. Tenses. Vaincre, vainquant, vaincu, je vains, je vainquis.

Ind. Pres. Je vains, tu vains, il vaine, nous vainquons, vous vainquez, ils vainquent.

Imperf. Je vainquais, etc., nous vainquions, etc.

Past Def. Je vainquis, etc., nous vainquîmes, etc.

Fut. Je vainurai, etc., nous vainurons, etc.

Cond. Pres. Je vainrais, etc., nous vainrions, etc.

Imper. Vains, vainquons, vainquez.

Subj. Pres. Que je vainque, etc., que nous vainquions, etc.

Imperf. Que je vainquisse, etc., que nous vainquissions, etc.

Inf. Vaincre.

Part. Vainquant, vaincu, vaincue.

Conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*.

Vivre (=to live).

Prim. Tenses. Vivre, vivant, vécu, je vis, je vécus.

Ind. Pres. Je vis, tu vis, il vit, nous vivons, vous vivez, ils vivent.

Imperf. Je vivais, etc., nous vivions, etc.

Past Def. Je vécus, etc., nous vécûmes, etc.

Fut. Je vivrai, etc., nous vivrons, etc.

<i>Cond. Pres.</i>	Je vivrais, etc., nous vivrions, etc.
<i>Imper.</i>	Vis, vivons, vivez.
<i>Subj. Pres.</i>	Que je vive, etc., que nous vivions, etc.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que je vécusse, etc., que nous vécussons, etc.
<i>Injin.</i>	Vivre.
<i>Part.</i>	Vivant, vécu.

Conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. What is the difference between an irregular and a defective verb?
2. Give the future of *mener*, and the indicative present of *appeler*.
3. Give the present participle of *effacer*, and the past participle of *percer*.
4. Write the imperfect of *venger*, the past participle of *bénir*, and the future of *aller* and *envoyer*.
5. Write the following verbs in the subjunctive present: — *acquiescer*, *bouillir*, *courir*, *cueillir*.
6. Write the following verbs in the future: — *mourir*, *sauter*, *tenter*, *venir*, *braire*.
7. Write the following verbs in the indicative present: — *dormir*, *faillir*, *gêner*.
8. Write the following verbs in the conditional: — *asseoir*, *scier*, *échoir*, *faillir*, *mouvoir*, *pleuvoir*, *pouvoir*, *choir*, *savoir*, *valoir*, *voir*, *souloir*.
9. Write the following verbs in the indicative present, and past definite: — *coudre*, *dire*, *éclore*, *faire*, *friser*, *naître*, *prendre*, *répondre*, *traire*, *vaincre*.

Exercise 34.

Première conjugaison.

1. Je vais à la poste. 2. Vas-tu lire ce livre? 3. Ce cheval ne va pas vite. 4. Ne vont-ils pas tous les jours à leur bureau? 5. J'irai dimanche matin à l'église. 6. N'iriez-vous pas au concert? 7. Ne croyez pas que j'aille à Paris l'été prochain. 8. Je ne voudrais pas qu'il allât se compromettre. 9. Quand m'enverrez-vous mon argent? 10. Nous vous enverrions ces livres si nous les avions. 11. Je me lève tous les matins à six heures. 12. J'achèterais cette maison de campagne. 13. Il m'appellera quand il sera prêt. 14. Traçons un tableau complet de la situation. 15. En rangeant ma bibliothèque, j'ai trouvé votre lettre.

¹ morceau (m.), ² penser, ³ se lever, ⁴ de bonne heure, ⁵ tous les matins, ⁶ bureau, (m.), ⁷ menacer, ⁸ revue (f.), ⁹ achever, ¹⁰ cacher.

1. I shall send you some books. 2. Would you go to the concert? 3. Let us eat a piece¹ of bread. 4. I do not think² that he gets up³ early.⁴ 5. This child goes to (the) school every morning.⁵ 6. Will you go to your office? 7. Let us threaten⁶ him. 8. He will call you to-morrow. 9. We went yesterday to see a review.⁷ 10. You would send too little (of) money. 11. That they might protect that bad man. 12. Finish⁸ this book. 13. That he may send⁹ the letter.

Seconde conjugaison.

1. Béni soit-il pour toute sa générosité. 2. J'ai mangé du pain bénit. 3. Les sciences et les arts florissaient sous le règne de Louis XIV. 4. Nous haïssons les méchants, mais il hait les hommes vertueux. 5. Il acquiert de jour en jour plus de réputation. 6. Nous accourûmes à sa voix. 7. Ci-gît le meilleur des rois. 8. Je me suis enquis de votre ami partout. 9. Il fuirait les flatteurs. 10. Cusilleraï-je ces jolies fleurs? 11. Croyez-vous qu'il m'en offrit, si j'allais le voir? 12. Je me meurs. 13. Les forces lui défaillent. 14. Il mourut de chagrin. 15. J'ai très-bien dormi. 16. Je requiers votre secours. 17. Faites bouillir un peu d'eau. 18. Je pars ce soir pour la France. 19. Vous ressentirez les effets de sa colère. 20. Il ne concourra pas pour ce prix. 21. Avez-vous oui dire qu'il mente jamais? 22. Il viendra si vous le souffrez.

* consentir, * mariage (m.), * pressentir, * malheur (m.), * malade, * dormir, * mourir, * l'année dernière, * assaillir, * retranchement (m.), * se vêtir, * assaillir, * de, * requérir, * rouvrir, * malle (f.), * entr'ouvrir, * obtenir, * dis-convenir de, * dit, * devenir, * haïr, * gâler, * pays (m.), * bénir, * prêtre, * pendant.

1. I consent¹ to the marriage² of my son. 2. I apprehend³ some misfortunes.⁴ 3. The patient⁵ slept⁶ very well yesterday. 4. He died⁷ last year.⁸ 5. Shall we not assault⁹ the enemy to-morrow in his intrenchments¹⁰? 6. That you might clothe yourself¹¹ a little better. 7. That she might start¹² with¹³ fear. 8. He would request¹⁴ a favour from you. 9. I shall open again¹⁵ that trunk.¹⁶ 10. They would half open¹⁷ the window. 11. I shall obtain¹⁸ the consent of my parents. 12. I disowned¹⁹ what he said.²⁰ 13. Would you not become²¹ learned if you worked a little more? 14. We hate²² (the) hypocrites. 15. Here lies²³ a man who has served his country²⁴ with zeal. 16. This water has been consecrated²⁵ by the priest.²⁶ 17. (The) commerce flourished (imperfect) in our country during²⁷ his reign.

Troisième conjugaison.

1. Tu ne vaux pas mieux que ton frère. 2. C'est un ressort très-ingénieux qui meut la machine. 3. Il faut pratiquer la vertu si l'on veut être heureux. 4. Nous pouvions vous être utiles. 5. Vous ne savez pas votre leçon. 6. Il pleuvait hier. 7. Vous prévaliez sur nous. 8. Nous prévimus toutes les conséquences de cette affaire. 9. Ils s'assirent sur le pont du navire. 10. Vous pour-vûtes à la sûreté de la ville. 11. Cette robe vous sied à merveille.

12. Vous verrez mieux d'ici. 13. Cette réponse équivaudrait à un refus. 14. Je ne pense pas qu'il faille lui demander pardon. 15. Qu'ils sachent que je ne les oublie pas. 16. Si je pouvais lui parler, j'obtiendrais ce que je demande. 17. Cette lettre de change écherra lundi. 18. Je crains qu'il ne pleuve. 19. Elle émut le cœur de cet homme insensible.

¹ valoir, ² guinée, ³ scoir, ⁴ vouloir, ⁵ émonvoir, ⁶ il faut, ⁷ savoir, ⁸ chemin (m.), ⁹ grand, ¹⁰ prévoir, ¹¹ pourvoir, ¹² à, ¹³ besoin (m.), ¹⁴ chaise (f.), ¹⁵ équivaloir, ¹⁶ insulte (f.), ¹⁷ prévaloir, ¹⁸ lettre de change, ¹⁹ échoir, ²⁰ falloir, ²¹ proposition (f.).

(1. This horse is worth¹ two hundred guineas.² 2. Has he moved the spring of the machine? 3. We shall see if this dress becomes³ (to) her.) 4. If you wish⁴ to move⁵ the heart of that unfeeling man, you must⁶ be useful to him. 5. It was raining yesterday. 6. You will not know⁷ your way⁸ in this large⁹ town. 7. Did you foresee¹⁰ the consequences of the battle? 8. I shall provide¹¹ for¹² your wants.¹³ 9. Sit down, gentlemen, here are some chairs.¹⁴ 10. Do you think that his answer is equivalent¹⁵ to an insult¹⁶? 11. I shall prevail¹⁷ upon him. 12. When will your bill¹⁸ fall due? ¹⁹ 13. We did not suppose that it was necessary²⁰ to accept his proposal.²¹ 14. These colours will never become you. 15. He knows his lesson wonderfully well. 16. Do you see this magnificent landscape?

Quatrième conjugaison.

1. Je buvais un verre d'eau. 2. Il écrivit à ses enfants. 3. Croyez-vous qu'il comprenne votre remarque? 4. Je ferai tout mon possible pour vous servir. 5. S'il vous connaissait mieux, il vous croirait. 6. Permettez-moi de vous accompagner chez vous. 7. Je désirerais que vous lussiez ce bel ouvrage. 8. Ces enfants souriaient. 9. Ils se plurent beaucoup dans votre société. 10. Je veux qu'il prenne un parti énergique. 11. Je le suivrais partout. 12. Nous apprendrions ces règles avec facilité. 13. Il vécut heureux et mourut à un âge avancé. 14. Ils trayaient leurs vaches. 15. Il me nuisit dans toutes les occasions. 16. Pourquoi n'absoudrions-nous pas ce pauvre homme? 17. Il défit les ennemis à deux reprises différentes. 18. Ils abattirent le mur. 19. Ne déplurent-ils pas à leur maître? 20. Poursuis ton chemin. 21. Faites votre devoir. 22. Ils se repurent de chimères. 23. Cet arbre croîtrait rapidement s'il était arrosé. 24. Il éteignit les chandelles. 25. Ne plaignaient-ils pas vos malheurs? 26. Ils disparurent bientôt. 27. Enjoignez-lui de terminer cette affaire.

*boire, *écire, *croire, *comprendre, *suivre, *à travers, *tous les, *abattre, *absoudre, *disparaître, *croître, ¹²se plaindre, ¹³se repaître de, ¹⁴châtrer (f.), ¹⁵vivre, ¹⁶défaire, ¹⁷ancêtre, ¹⁸atteindre, ¹⁹balle (f.), ²⁰traire, ²¹vahe, ²²sourire, ²³éteindre, ²⁴lampe (f.), ²⁵joindre, ²⁶réduire, ²⁷reconduire, ²⁸feindre, ²⁹enfreindre, ³⁰naitre, ³¹sujet, ³²se dédire de, ³³coudre, ³⁴traduire, ³⁵se résoudre à, ³⁶plaindre, ³⁷émoudre, ³⁸légume (m.), ³⁹confire, ⁴⁰vinaigre.

1. I never drink ¹wine. 2. Have you written ²to your father? 3. I thought ³that you understood ⁴me. 4. I shall follow ⁵him through ⁶every ⁷obstacle. 5. They were felling ⁸a tree. 6. I absolve ⁹you. 7. When did he disappear ¹⁰? 8. These trees have grown ¹¹a great deal lately. 9. I shall complain ¹²of you. 10. Do not feed on ¹³idle dreams. ¹⁴ 11. This stupid poem will never live. ¹⁵ 12. I shall defeat ¹⁶the enemy without any ¹⁷difficulty. 13. He has been struck ¹⁸by a bullet. ¹⁹ 14. I do not believe you. 15. Have you milked ²⁰the cows ²¹? 16. He is always smiling. ²² 17. Put out ²³the lamp. ²⁴ 18. If you join ²⁵your efforts, you will succeed. 19. Would he drive ²⁶you to (the) despair? 20. I shall take you back ²⁷in my carriage. 21. He pretended ²⁸to be ill. 22. Will they not infringe ²⁹the laws? 23. We are born ³⁰liable ³¹to many (of) infirmities. 24. We would withdraw ³²our accusation. 25. They will sew ³³on this button. 26. She translated ³⁴her letter. 27. Let them resolve ³⁵to suffer much. 28. That they may pity ³⁶his fall. 29. I have ground ³⁷your knives. 30. These vegetables ³⁸are pickled ³⁹in (some) vinegar. ⁴⁰

SECTION X.

FORMATION OF THE VERBS.

177. New French verbs are formed by placing before them: 1. a noun: **maintenir** (=to maintain [properly *tenir avec la main* =to hold with the hand]);—2. an adjective employed adverbially or an adverb: **mal traîner**, **traîner mal** (=to ill-use);—3. a prefix: **défaire** *dé...* and **faire** (=to undo); **surmonter**, *sur* and **monter** (=to surmount).

The most important of the prefixes are the following: 1. **contre** (=against), *dire*, **contredire** (=to say, to contradict); *signer*, **contresigner** (=to sign, to countersign); 2. **entre** (=between), *voir*, **entrevoir** (=to see, to have a glimpse of); *ouvrir*, **entr'ouvrir** (=to open, to half-open); *aider*, **s'entr'aider**, (=to help, to help one another); *dévor*, **s'entre-dévorer**.

(=to devour, to devour one another); 3. **bien** (=well), *faire, bienfaire* (=to do, to do good); 4. **mal** (=ill), *traiter, maltraiter* (=to treat, to ill-treat); *mener, mal-mener* (=to lead, to treat roughly); 5. **més**, prefix of depreciation, Eng. *mis, altier, mésallier* (=to match, to mis-match); *user, mésuser* (=to use, to misuse); 6. **re**, prefix of return and repetition, *changer, rechanger* (=to change, to change over again); *venir, revenir* (=to come, to come again); *blanchir, reblanchir* (=to whiten, to whiten over again); 7. **sur** (=above, over), *mener, surmener* (=to drive, to overdrive); *chauffer, surchauffer* (=to heat, to overheat); this prefix implies excess. *end*

New verbs are moreover formed in French by adding to substantives the termination **er** of the first conjugation. Thus *barricade* (=a barricade), *fourrage* (=forage), *chemin* (=path, road), *crayon* (=pencil), *frisson* (=shudder), give *barricader, fourrager, cheminer, crayonner, frissonner* (=to barricade, to forage, to journey, to sketch, to shudder). But the most recent words are generally formed with the termination **iser**: *germaniser, napoléoniser, bonapartiser* (=to make German, to win over to the cause of Napoleon or Bonaparte).

178. The French language makes up new verbs from *adjectives*, sometimes by the addition of the termination **ir**: *jaune, bleu, gros* (=yellow, blue, big), give *jaunir, bleuir, grossir* (=to become yellow, blue, big); sometimes by adding the termination **ir** and prefixing **a**: *grand, a-grand-ir* (=great, to enlarge), *mince, a-mince-ir* (=thin, to make thin), *maigre, a-maigr-ir* (=lean, to become or make lean), etc.

179. The French language creates new verbs with the help of *verbs* already existing, by introducing the three diminutive suffixes: **ot, on, asse**, which give to the words a depreciative sense: *cligner, clign-ot-er* (=to wink, to wink repeatedly); *trembler, trembl-ot-er* (=to tremble, to shiver); *chanter, chant-onn-er* (=to sing, to hum); *griffer, griff-onn-er* (=to scratch, to scribble); *rêver, rêv-asse-er* (=to dream, to muse).

4 + + + +

SECTION XI.

RULES FOR THE AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH ITS SUBJECT.

180. Every verb must be in the same number and person as its subject: *Je lis* (=I read), *vous chantez* (=you sing).

Lis is in the first person singular, because its subject *je* is in the first person singular; *chantez* is in the second person plural, because its subject *vous* is in the second person plural.

181. When a verb has two subjects in the singular, it is put in the plural: *Paul et Marie lisent* (=Paul and Mary read).

182. When the subjects are of different persons, the verb is put in the first, if there is a pronoun of the first person in the sentence, otherwise it is put in the second: *vous, lui et moi, nous sommes heureux* (=you, he, and I, we are happy); *vous et lui, vous êtes sages* (=you and he are wise). The pronoun *nous* or *vous* is generally expressed before the verb.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. How are new verbs formed in French? 2. Give a list of the prefixes used in connection with the verb. 3. Write a list of suffixes added to the substantive;—to the adjective. 4. Name a few diminutive verbs. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 5. How does the verb agree with its subject? 6. In what number is the verb put when there are two subjects? 7. In what person is the verb put when the subjects are of different persons? |
|--|---|

Exercice 35.

1. Form new verbs from the following ones, preceded with: (1) a noun (main); 2. an adverb (mal); 3. a prefix (a. contre; b. entre; c. re; d. sur): 1. tenir; 2. mener, traiter, verser; 3. (a) dire, faire, carrer; (b) prendre, larder, mettre; (c) lancer, trancher, vêtir, voir, prendre; (d) veiller, seoir, nager, passer, prendre.
2. Form new verbs of the first conjugation from the following substantives: ménage, chant, apostrophe, cri.
3. Form new verbs of the second conjugation (a) from the following adjectives: bleu, jaune, gros, rouge, sale, verd (old

spelling of verb); (b) from the following adjectives, together with the prefix *a*: *maigre, mince, faible, fado, doux, brute*.

4. Form new verbs from the following ones by placing between the stem and the ending one of the suffixes: (a) *ot*, (b) *on*, (c) *asse*; (a) *éligner, taper*; (b) *chanter, griffer*; (c) *réver*.

Give in every case the English meaning of the verb, and write out the verbs in the following tenses:—

1. Subjunctive present, conditional past, perfect definite;
2. Indicative present, imperfect subjunctive, conditional present;
3. Future anterior, imperative, imperfect indicative;
4. Pluperfect subjunctive, past anterior, pluperfect indicative.

CHAPTER VI.

OF THE PARTICIPLE.

183. The participle is a word which *participates* at once in the nature of the verb, because it marks a tense: **lisant**, **ayant lu** (=reading, having read); and in that of the adjective, because it can serve to qualify a noun: *un homme charmant* (=a charming man), *une romance chantée* (=a ballad sung).

Participe comes from the Latin accusative *participem* (=that which takes a part, which participates).

184. There are two kinds of participles, the *participle present* and the *participle past*.

The present participle marks an action, and is always invariable: *il est doux de voir des enfants aimant leur mère et lui obéissant avec empressement* (=it is pleasant to see children loving their mother and obeying her with eagerness).

The same word becomes an *adjective* when it expresses the quality of a person or thing, in which case it agrees with the noun: *ces enfants sont aimants et obéissants* (=these children are affectionate and obedient).

185. When the present participle is *employed as an adjective*, it agrees in gender and number with the noun to which it refers: *un homme aimant* (=an affectionate man), *des eaux courantes* (=running waters).

a storm cloud

write

186. The same rule applies to the past participle:
un roi honoré (=an honoured king), *une maison meublée* (=a furnished house), *des champs cultivés* (=cultivated fields).

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. What is a participle? Explain the meaning of the word.
2. How many kinds of participles are there?
3. When is the present participle invariable?
4. How can the present participle be distinguished from the adjective?
5. State the rule of agreement for the present participle used as an adjective.
6. What is the rule of agreement for the past participle?

Exercise 36.

1. Un père obligeant. 2. Une demoiselle obligeante. 3. Cette femme est obligeante, prévenant tout le monde. 4. Des rumeurs alarmant la ville entière. 5. La plainte de ce pauvre esclave est touchante. 6. Une porte battante. 7. Des jeunes gens prévenants. 8. Une attitude supplante. 9. Un ouvrage terminé. 10. Des fleurs arrachées de leur tige. 11. Des fruits cueillis.

* bruit (m.), * alarmer, * obliger, * offre (f.), * en, * mériter, * flétrir, * chaleur (f.), * composer, * vivre, * obéir, * billet (m.), * supplier, * offensant.

- + 1. These rumours¹ are alarming.² 2. An obliging³ offer.⁴
 3. By⁵ obliging your friends, you will deserve⁶ their friendship.
 4. The flowers have been withered⁷ by the heat.⁸ 5. (The) society is composed⁹ of men living¹⁰ under the same laws.
 6. Pupils obeying¹¹ (to) their master. 7. A finished house.
 8. My two notes¹² are written. 9. A mother loving her children. 10. Slaves entreating¹³ the judge. 11. Offensive words.¹⁴

CHAPTER VII.

OF THE ADVERB.

187. The **adverb** is a word which serves to modify the significations of the verb, the adjective, or another adverb: *Le cheval court vite* (=the horse runs fast), *cette rose est très-belle* (=this rose is very beautiful), *cet enfant marche très-lentement* (=that child walks very slowly).

Adverb comes from the Latin *adverbium*, which means *near the verb*, because that word is usually placed near the verb.

188. There are in French eight kinds of adverbs: the adverbs of *place*, of *time*, of *manner*, of *quantity*, of *interrogation*, of *affirmation*, of *negation*, and of *doubt*.

189. The principal **adverbs of place** are: *ici* (=here), *là* (=there), *y* (=here or there), *où* (=where), *en* (=in), *loin* (=far), *ailleurs* (=elsewhere), *dès* (=on this side), *delà* (=on that side), *partout* (=everywhere), *çà* (=here), *dessus* (=above), *dessous* (=beneath), *dedans* (=within), *dehors* (=without), *devant* (=before), *derrière* (=behind), etc. *Je partirai d'ici pour aller partout où tu voudras* (=I shall start from hence to go wherever thou wilt), *restez là* (=remain there), *allons ailleurs* (=let us go elsewhere).

Adverbs of place are either expressed by one word, as *là*, *y*, *en*, etc.; or compounded of two, as *dedans* (from *de* and *dans*), *partout* (from *par* and *tout*), *dessous* (from *de* and *sous*).

190. The principal **adverbs of time** are: *quand* (=when), *puis* (=then), *depuis* (=since), *souvent* (=often), *toujours* (=always), *maintenant* (=now), *jamais* (=ever), *aujourd'hui* (=to-day), *demain* (=to-morrow), *hier* (=yesterday), *jadis* (=formerly), *lors*, *alors* (=then), *longtemps* (=for a long time), *enfin* (=at last), etc. *J'irai demain et aussi souvent que tu le voudras* (=I shall go to-morrow, and as often as thou wilt).

These adverbs are either expressed by a single word, as *hier*, *lors*, *quand*, *puis*; or compounded of two words, as *longtemps* (from *long* and *temps*), *aussitôt* (from *aussi* and *tôt*), *ensuite* (from *en* and *suite*).

191. The **adverbs of manner** are formed by adding the termination **ment** to a feminine adjective: *Il mourut courageusement*, i.e., *il mourut d'une manière courageuse* (=he died courageously); *il vécut sagement*, i.e., *il vécut d'une manière sage* (=he lived wisely).

EXCEPTIONS:

A. If the feminine adjective ends with two vowels, the last one is cut off: *hardie* (=bold), *hardiment* (=boldly).

B. The following adjectives form their adverbs by placing an **acute accent** over the **e** preceding the termination **-ment** :—

aveugle = blind
commun = common
conforme = conformable
confus = confused
diffus = diffuse
énorme = enormous
exprès = express
immense = immense
impuni = unpunished
obscur = dark
opiniâtre = obstinate
précis = precise
profond = deep
uniforme = uniform

aveuglément = blindly
communément = commonly
conformément = conformably
confusément = confusedly
diffusément = diffusely
énormément = enormously
expressément = expressly
immensément = immensely
impunément = with impunity
obscurément = darkly
opiniâtrément = obstinately
précisément = precisely
profondément = deeply
uniformément = uniformly.

N.B.—The **e** open of the feminine adjective *complète* (=complete) becomes **é** close in the adverb *complètement* (=completely). 

C. *Brièvement* (=briefly) and *traîtreusement* (=treacherously), commonly used as the adverbs of the adjectives *bref* (=short), and *traître* (=treacherous), are formed in the regular manner from the old feminine adjectives *brève* and *traïteuse*.

D. The final **i** of *gentil* (=pretty) not being pronounced, the adverb is spelt *gentiment* (=prettily).

192. The adjectives ending in **ent**, **ant** form their adverbs in **emment**, **amment**: *prudent* (=prudent), *prudemment* (=prudently); *obligeant* (=obliging), *obligeamment* (=obligingly).

EXCEPTIONS :—

A. *Lent* (=slow) and *véhément* (=vehement, violent) form their adverbs *lentement* (=slowly), *véhétement* (=vehemently), according to the general rule. (See § 191.)

B. The adverbs *notamment* (=especially), *nuïtamment* (=by night), and *sciemment* (=knowingly), were formed from the Old French adjectives *notant*, *nuïtant*, and *scient*, which are now obsolete.

193. Adverbs of quality are also formed in French by the occasional use of the *simple adjective*: *chanter juste* (=to sing in tune), *voir clair* (=to see distinctly), *parler bas* (=to speak in a low voice), etc.

194. The adverbs of manner in *ment* have, like their corresponding adjectives, the three degrees of comparison: *clairement*, *plus clairement*, *très-clairement*.

The *adjectives* employed as adverbs of quality have likewise the three degrees of comparison: *chanter juste*, *plus juste*, *très-juste*.

The adverbs of quality, *bien*, *mal*, form their degrees of comparison irregularly: *bien* makes *mieux* in the comparative, *le mieux* in the superlative relative, and *très-bien* in the superlative absolute; *mal* makes *pis* or *plus mal* in the comparative, and *le pis* in the superlative relative, or *très-mal* in the superlative absolute.

In the same way, the adverbs *loin* (=far), *près* (=near), *tôt* (=soon), *tard* (=late), *vite* (=quickly), *volontiers* (=willingly), make *plus loin*, *très-loin*, *plus près*, *très-près*, etc.

NOTE.—Adverbs are generally placed after the verb: *Il parle clairement* (=he speaks clearly).

195. The principal adverbs of quantity are *assez* (=enough), *trop* (=too much), *peu* (=little), *beaucoup* (=much), *très* (=very), *tant* (=so much), etc.

N.B.—*Peu* makes *moins* in the comparative, *le moins* in the superlative relative, and *très-peu* in the superlative absolute.

Adverbs of quantity generally take *de* after them. *Très*, *environ*, *davantage* are exceptions; *bien* requires *des*.

196. The principal adverbs of interrogation are: *pourquoi* (=why), *comment* (=how), *quand* (=when), *combien* (=how much), etc.

197. The principal adverbs of affirmation are: *oui* (=yes), *certes* (=certainly), *vraiment* (=truly), etc.

Oui was *oil* in the Old French (see Introduction, p. 3). This *oil* had for its corresponding negative expression *neüil*, which has become in modern French *nenni*, just as *oil* has become *oui*.

198. The principal adverbs of negation are: *non*, *ne*, *pas*, *goutte*, *personne*, *rien*, etc.: *non*, *je ne veux pas* (=no, I will not).

The French have really only two adverbs of negation: *non* and *ne*; the other words, such as *pas*, *point*, *goutte*, are mere substantives: *un pas* (=a step), *un point* (=a point), *une goutte* (=a drop), used adverbially as terms of comparison. Every one knows that, in order to give greater strength to the expression of our judgments, we readily support them by a comparison: *pauvre comme Job* (=as poor as Job), *fort comme un lion* (=as strong as a lion), *féroce comme un tigre* (=as fierce as a tigre), etc.; or by using an estimation: *ce n'est pas un sou* (=this object is not worth a penny). In like manner, the adverbial locutions *pas*, *mie*, *goutte*, *point*, etc., were originally employed in a matter-of-fact manner—they were placed, we mean, in a comparison where they had a distinctive signification: *Je ne marche pas* (=I do not walk a step), *je ne vois point* (=I do not see a point), *je ne mange mie* (=I do not eat a crumb), *je ne bois goutte* (=I do not drink a drop), etc.

199. The principal adverbs of doubt are: *peut-être* (=perhaps), *probablement* (=probably): *Il sera probablement ici demain* (=he will probably be here to-morrow).

Peut-être is elliptical for *cela peut être*, and this accounts for the fact that it can be followed by *que*: *Peut-être que je viendrai*, i.e. *cela peut être que je viendrai* (=it may be that I shall come).

200. A combination of words having the force of an adverb is called an **adverbial locution**. Thus: *à l'envi* (=vying with each other), *au delà* (=beyond), *en deçà* (=on this side of), *tout à fait* (=quite), *point du tout* (=not at all).

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. What is an <i>adverb</i>?—Explain the meaning of the word. 2. How many kinds of adverbs are there? 3. Name the adverbs of <i>place</i>;—of <i>time</i>. 4. What is the comparative of <i>bien</i>?—of <i>mal</i>?—of <i>peu</i>? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 5. Give a list of the adverbs of <i>quantity</i>—<i>interrogation</i>—<i>affirmation</i>—<i>negation</i>—<i>doubt</i>. 6. How do you form adverbs of <i>manner</i>? 7. What is meant by an adverbial locution? 8. Name a few adjectives used adverbially. |
|--|--|

Exercise 37.

1. Il dit toujours la vérité. 2. Elle vient quelquefois. 3. Nous réussirons tôt ou tard. 4. Je suis allé hier à Brighton. 5. Voyez-vous cette maison là-bas? 6. Il est tard; vous devez venir plus tôt. 7. Parlez peu, mais parlez à propos. 8. Ce que l'on conçoit bien s'énonce clairement, et les mots pour le dire arrivent aisément. 9. Il ne se moquera pas de moi impunément. 10. Ne lui aviez-

vous pas expressément défendu de prendre votre fusil? 11. Puis-
que vous le voulez, j'y consens. 12. Je me tiendrai dorénavant
sur mes gardes. 13. Cette demoiselle ne chante pas juste.
14. Ces élèves étudient à l'envi. 15. Il entra tout à coup.

*arriver, *guerrier (m.), *action (f.), *entreprise (f.), *périr, *gagner, *en
retard, *se rencontrer, *paraître, ¹⁰ de, ¹¹ se conduire, ¹² se rappeler.

1. This event happened¹ suddenly. 2. Whence comes this
warrior²? 3. How many shares³ have you bought in this under-
taking⁴? 4. We shall certainly perish⁵ together. 5. The general
has already won⁶ two battles. 6. He often loses his money, and
he is always late⁷ for the train (m.). 7. When shall we meet⁸
again? 8. Your daughter seemed⁹ quite surprised at¹⁰ my offer.
9. The citadel was obstinately attacked by the enemy. 10. I have
seen that man everywhere. 11. I went to the Crystal Palace
yesterday. 12. Above all, tell him to meet me to-morrow in the
park. 13. This child behaves¹¹ very well. 14. I remember¹² the
details of the catastrophe confusedly.

CHAPTER VIII.

OF THE PREPOSITION.

201. The **preposition** is an invariable word which
serves to unite two words by showing the relation in
which the one stands to the other: *Le livre de Paul*
(=Paul's book); *utile à l'homme* (=useful to man);
de and *à* are prepositions.

Preposition comes from the Latin accusative *propositionem*, from
pro (=before), and *positionem* (=position).

202. The relations expressed by prepositions are five
in number: 1. time: *avant* (=before), *après* (=after),
depuis (=since), etc.; 2. place: *à* (=to, at), *vers*
(=towards), *dans* (=in), *chez* (=at or in the house of),
devant (=before), *derrière* (=behind), etc.; 3. manner
or means: *par* (=by), *avec* (=with), *sans* (=without),
selon (=according to), etc.; 4. origin or cause: *de* (=of),
par (=by), *pour* (=for); 5. tendency towards or
remoteness from: *envers* (=towards), *pour* (=for), *contre*
(=against), *à* (=to), *de* (of), etc.

203. The prepositions sometimes consist of one
word, as *à*, *de*, *dans*, *pour*, *par*, *sur*, and are then called

beginning mais come as above
page

FORMATION OF SIMPLE PREPOSITIONS.

149

simple prepositions ; sometimes they are made up of two or more words, as *quant à*, (=as for), *à cause de* (=on account of), *vis-à-vis de* (=opposite), *au-dessus de* (=above, upon), *à l'égard de* (=with regard to), etc., and are then designated as **prepositive locutions**.

204. REMARK 1.—The preposition *à* must not be confounded with *a*, third person singular of the verb *avoir* ; *à*, preposition, takes the grave accent : *il monte à cheval* (=he goes on horseback) ; *a*, verb, has no accent : *il a un livre* (=he has a book).

2. Dès, preposition, takes the grave accent : *il se lève dès l'aurore* (=he rises with the dawn) ; **des** (=of the), genitive plural of the definite article, takes no accent : *les feuilles des arbres* (=the leaves of the trees).

SECTION I.

FORMATION OF SIMPLE PREPOSITIONS.

205. The French language has formed new prepositions with the help of:—

1. Substantives : *malgré*, from the old French adjective *mal* (=mauvais=bad), and the substantive *gré* (=will=in spite of).

2. Adjectives : *sauf* (still found in *sain et sauf* [=safe and sound]=except, but) : *Sauf mes intérêts* (=my interests excepted), *sauf Jean* (=John excepted).

3. Imperative of verbs : *voici* (=here is, here are), *voilà* (there is, there are).

These words are compounded of the adverb *ci* and *là* and of *vo*, the old imperative of *voir*. *Voici le loup* (=here is the wolf), means therefore really : *voyez ici le loup* (=see here the wolf), or *le loup est ici* ; *voyez-le* (=the wolf is here ; see him).

4. Past participles : *passé* (=over), *vu* (=considering), *excepté* (=except, save), *attendu* (=considering), *passé ce moment* (=the moment being over), *excepté cet homme* (=with the exception of that man), *vu le danger que nous courons* (=considering the danger we are running), *attendu son infirmité* (=considering his infirmity).

We must add to this list *hormis* (=except), spelt in Old French *hor-mis*, that is to say, *mis hors* (=placed outside). In this locution

the participle *mis* (*missus*) was variable; the French of the thirteenth century said: *Cet homme a perdu tous ses enfants, hors mise sa fille* (=this man has lost all his children, with the exception of his daughter). In the fifteenth century the participle *mis* was joined on to the adverb *hors*, and the expression *hors mis* became in its turn a preposition.

5. Present participles: *durant, pendant, suivant, concernant, touchant* (from *durer, pendre, suivre, concerner, toucher*). *L'avocat mourut pendant le procès* = *tandis que le procès était pendant* (=the barrister died whilst the lawsuit was pending), *durant sa vie* = *sa vie durant* (=as long as his life lasts), *durant le jour* = *pendant que le jour dure* (=whilst the day lasts).

SECTION II.

FORMATION OF PREPOSITIVE LOCUTIONS.

206. They are formed chiefly with the help either of substantives or of adverbs followed by the preposition *de*. Thus nouns, such as *face, force, cause, faute, milieu*, etc., give the prepositive locutions: *en face de* (=opposite), *à force de* (=by dint of), *à cause de* (=on account of), *faute de* (=for want of), *au milieu de* (=in the midst of), etc.; and adverbs, such as *loin, autour, devant*, etc., give *loin de* (=far from), *autour de* (=around), *au devant de* (=in front of), etc.

Vis-à-vis is a compound of the same kind. The Old French *vis* (from the Latin *visus*) = *visage* (=the face); hence the locution *vis-à-vis*, which is literally equivalent to *face à face* (=face to face). *Vis* is also found in the word *visière* (=visor); the visor was originally the part of the helmet intended to protect the face

= *vis*.

SECTION III.

GOVERNMENT OF PREPOSITIONS.

- 207.** 1. Prepositions usually govern the accusative;
2. Prepositive locutions generally govern the genitive;
3. The following prepositions and prepositive locutions govern the dative:—

Jusqu'à, jusqu'à (=as far as, until), *quant à* (=as for, as to), *par rapport à* (=with regard to).

208. The prepositions are always placed, in French, immediately before the object: *De quoi parlez-vous?* (= what are you speaking of?).

209. The prepositions must be repeated before every word which they govern: *Il ira à Paris et à Londres* (= he will go to Paris and London).

210. The verb governed by a preposition must be put in the infinitive, except in the case of *en*, which governs the present participle: *Ne partez pas sans venir me voir* (= do not start without coming to see me), *il tremble en parlant* (= he trembles whilst speaking).

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

1. What is a *preposition*?
2. State the difference between *a*, *vers*, and *à*, preposition;—between *des*, article, and *dès* preposition.
3. What is a *prepositional locution*?
4. Name the *present* and *past participles* used as prepositions.
5. How are *prepositional locutions* formed with the help (a) of nouns, (b) of adverbs?
6. Name the prepositions which govern substantives (a) in the genitive, (b) in the dative, (c) in the accusative.
7. What preposition governs the verb in the present participle?
8. Where are prepositions placed?

Exercice 38.

- Did he not see Paris?*
un objet
 1. Ne va-t-il pas à Paris? 2. Il a été ingrat envers son bienfaiteur. 3. Mon chapeau est dans la chambre. 4. Venez chez moi. 5. Vers le nord, la nature présente un aspect triste et sauvage. *with one*
near the
 6. Dès aujourd'hui je renonce à la voir. 7. En agissant ainsi vous avez manqué à toutes les convenances. 8. Mettez vos livres sur la table. 9. Irez-vous jusqu'à Berlin? 10. Quant à moi, je meurs de faim. 11. Êtes-vous hors d'affaire? 12. Attendu sa jeunesse, nous ne le punirons pas. 13. Il demeure près de l'église.
 'près de, 'offense (s), 'doux, 'orage (m.), 'éclater, 'dès.

1. He is going to Paris. 2. I live near the railway. 3. In absolving this man, justice has not been done. 4. Never be ungrateful towards your parents. 5. Considering the nature of the offence, the punishment is extremely mild. 6. During the ceremony, a thunderstorm burst over the town. 7. The troops are out of danger. 8. As for my books, they are in your room. 9. Towards the river you will find a pretty country-house. 10. The book shall be sent to the printer's as early as to-morrow morning. 11. The laws are the same in France and Algeria.

CHAPTER IX.

OF THE CONJUNCTION.

211. The conjunction is an invariable word which serves to unite together two words or two propositions: *Pierre et Paul sont frères* (= Peter and Paul are brothers), *aimons Dieu puisqu'il est bon* (= let us love God, since He is good); **et**, **puisque** are conjunctions.

Conjunction from the Latin accusative *conjunctionem* (= conjunction, properly union).

212. The conjunctions are sometimes one single word, as *et*, *ou*, *si*, *mais*, etc., and are then called **simple conjunctions**; sometimes they are formed of two or more words: *tandis que*, *bien que*, *parce que*, and are then designated as **conjunctive locutions**.

213. The principal **simple conjunctions** are: *car* (= for), *comme* (= as), *donc* (= then, therefore), *et* (= and), *mais* (= but), *or* (= now, but), *ou* (= or), *que* (= that), *quand* (= though, even though), *ni* (= nor), *si* (= if), each of which is really only one word.

To the above list we must add the conjunctions such as *plutôt* (= rather), *puisque* (= since), *néanmoins* (= nevertheless), *cependant* (= meanwhile), *lorsque* (= when), which are really compounded of two distinct words (*plus-tôt*, *puis-que*, *néant-moins*, *ce-pendant*, *lors-que*), combined into one by modern orthography.

214. The principal **conjunctive locutions** are: *au contraire*, (= on the contrary), *au moins* (= at least), *tandis que* (= whilst), *alors que* (= when, now that), *sans que* (= without), *dès que* (= as soon as), *avant que* (= before that), *après que* (= after that), etc.

215. REMARK.—1. Que is a relative pronoun when used instead of *lequel*, *laquelle*; it is an adverb when used instead of *combien*; it is a conjunction when it serves to unite two clauses of a sentence: *J's crois que Dieu est saint* (= I believe that God is holy).

4-1

2. **Où**, adverb (=where, when), points out a place or a time, and takes the grave accent; **ou**, conjunction (=or) takes no accent: *Mon frère ou moi* (=my brother or I).

8. **Si** is an adverb when it can be used instead of *tant, tellement* (=so, so much); in all other cases, it is a conjunction: *Je sortirai si le temps est beau* (=I shall go out if the weather is fine).

216. Conjunctions followed by **de** take the verb in the infinitive. (For the use of the indicative or subjunctive after conjunctions, see Syntax of prepositions).

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. What is a conjunction? | 5. Distinguish between <i>si</i> , adverb, and <i>si</i> , conjunction. |
| 2. Distinguish between simple conjunctions, and conjunctive locutions. | 6. In what mood is the verb placed after a conjunction followed by <i>de</i> . |
| 3. When is <i>que</i> an adverb? | |
| 4. When is <i>où</i> an adverb? | |

Exercise 39.

1. Vous et moi, lui ou elle. 2. J'ai fait mon thème, mais je n'ai pas appris ma leçon. 3. Soyez tranquille, car le maître est là. 4. Puisque vous ne voulez pas m'accompagner, je ne sortirai pas. 5. Il ferait cela plutôt que de vous le proposer. 6. Le roi a rejeté cette mesure comme trop violente. 7. Il ne sait ni lire, ni écrire. 8. Il a perdu beaucoup d'argent, néanmoins il persiste à jouer. 9. Quoiqu'il aille à Londres, il ne verra pas son ami.

since
this

being
read
revisited

¹ pourvu que, ² rêver, ³ grandeur (*J.*), ⁴ quoique, ⁵ parce que, ⁶ indisposé, ⁷ dire, ⁸ tandis que, ⁹ déguiser, ¹⁰ que, ¹¹ à moins que, ¹² ne changes, ¹³ abandonner, ¹⁴ part (*J.*).

write

1. Provided¹ you are² attentive, you will succeed.³ 2. Neither gold nor greatness⁴ make a man happy. 3. You and I shall go together. 4. Although⁵ I do⁶ all (that which) I can, I do not succeed. 5. If we do not succeed, it will not be our fault. 6. I cannot come because⁷ I am unwell.⁸ 7. We speak⁹ the truth, whereas¹⁰ your friend always disguises¹¹ it. 8. Whether¹² I was¹³ hungry or not, you should have kept the dinner on the table. 9. Unless¹⁴ you alter¹⁵ your plans, I shall give up¹⁶ my share¹⁷ in the business.

* These verbs must be put in the subjunctive.

A. Velter

4-1

CHAPTER X

OF THE INTERJECTION.

217. The interjection is a cry, an exclamation expressing the sudden impulse of the mind: *Ah! Oh! Fi! Hélas!*

Interjection comes from the Latin accusative *interjectionem*, which means literally the action of throwing into the middle (of the sentence).

Principal interjections.

Joy:	Bon! Vive la joie!	Surprise: Quoi! Vraiment!
Grief:	Hélas! Aie! Ah! Ouf!	Silence: Chut! Paix!
Fear:	Ha! Hé! Ho!	Calling: Hola! Ho! Hem!
Aversion:	Fi! Fi done!	Warning: Gare!
Admiration:	Oh!	Attention: Tenez! Voilà!
Encouraging:	Allons! Courage!	Disbelief: Ah! bah!

Ciel! Bê! Bravo! Tout beau (=softly), are also used in various exclamations.

218. The interjections are formed either with the help of nouns: *paix!* (=silence), *courage!* (=cheer up!), *patience!* (=have patience!), or of verbs: *soit!* (=be it so!), *allons!* (=come on!), *suffit!* (=enough! that will do!). Sometimes they are mere exclamations: *ah! oh! etc.*

Hélas, written in Old French in two words: *hé!* is formed of the interjection *hé!* and the adjective *las* (*lassus*) which formerly meant *malheureux* = unhappy. The French of the fourteenth century said: *Cette mère est lasse de la mort de son fils* (This mother is unhappy at the death of her son). *Hé! Hé! que je suis* (=Ah! unhappy that I am!). It was only in the fifteenth century that the two words coalesced, and that *hélas* became inseparable. At the same time, *las* lost all its primitive energy, and changed the meaning of grief for that of weariness or fatigue, just as it had happened in the words *gêne* (=inconvenience) and *ennui* (=weariness), which originally meant *torture* and *hatred*, respectively.

Dame! which must not be confounded with the feminine substantive *dame* (= lady), is the abbreviation of *Dame-Dieu*, an Old French exclamation equivalent to *Seigneur Dieu* (= Lord God). We constantly find in medieval texts: *que Dame-Dieu nous aide!* (= the Lord God help us!). *Dame-Dieu*, and simply *Dame* (that is to say, Lord God), was used as an interjection; and the exclamation *Ah! dame* (= ah! well), which, nowadays, has lost all meaning, signifies really *Ah! Seigneur!* (= ah! Lord!). The word *dame* is still found in the geographical names *Dammartin*, *Dampierre*, etc., which signify *the Lord Martin*, *the Lord Peter*, etc.

QUESTIONS FOR EXAMINATION.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. What is an <i>interjection</i>? 2. Name the principal interjections. • How are interjections formed? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 4. Explain the original meaning of
<i>Hélas!</i> and <i>Dame!</i> |
|---|---|

44

4 +
The following table will complete and resume all the details given in Section III.

Conjugation of the auxiliary verb **avoir** (=to have), negatively, interrogatively, and interrogatively with a negation.

N.B.—The same scheme is applicable to any transitive verb, and to all neuter verbs conjugated with the auxiliary **avoir**.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Negatively.

PRESENT.—**Ne pas avoir** or **n'avoir pas**, not to have.

PAST.—**N'ayant pas eu**, not to have had.

PARTICIPLES.

Negatively.

PRESENT.—**N'ayant pas**, not having.

PAST.—**N'ayant pas eu**, not having had.

FUTURE.—**Ne devant pas avoir**, not about to have.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Negatively.

Interrogatively.

Interrog. with a neg.

I have not, etc.

Have I? etc.

Have I not? etc.

Je n'ai pas

ai-je? *

n'ai-je pas? †

tu n'as pas

as-tu?

n'as-tu pas?

il n'a pas

a-t-il?

n'a-t-il pas?

nous n'avons pas

avons-nous?

n'avons-nous pas?

vous n'avez pas

avez-vous?

n'avez-vous pas?

ils n'ont pas

ont-ils?

n'ont-ils pas?

* **Aimé-je?** Est-ce que je romps?

† **N'aimé-je pas?** Est-ce que je ne romps pas?

PAST INDEFINITE.

I have not had, etc.

Je n'ai pas eu
tu n'as pas eu
il n'a pas eu
nous n'avons pas eu

vous n'avez pas eu
ils n'ont pas eu

Have I had ? etc.

Ai-je * eu ?
as-tu eu ?
a-t-il eu ?
avons-nous eu ?

avez-vous eu ?
ont-ils eu ?

Have I not had ? etc.

N'ai-je pas eu ?
n'as-tu pas eu ?
n'a-t-il pas eu ?
n'avons-nous pas eu ?
n'avez-vous pas eu ?
n'ont-ils pas eu ?

IMPERFECT.

I had not, etc.

Je n'avais pas
tu n'avais pas
il n'avait pas
nous n'avions pas
vous n'aviez pas
ils n'avaient pas

Had I ? etc.

Avais-je ?
avais-tu ?
avait-il ?
avions-nous ?
aviez-vous ?
avaient-ils ?

Had I not ? etc.

N'avais-je pas ?
n'avais-tu pas ?
n'avait-il pas ?
n'avions-nous pas ?
n'aviez-vous pas ?
n'avaient-ils pas ?

PLUPERFECT.

I had not had, etc.

Je n'avais pas eu
tu n'avais pas eu
il n'avait pas eu
nous n'avions pas eu
vous n'aviez pas eu
ils n'avaient pas eu

Had I had ? etc.

avais-je eu ?
avais-tu eu ?
avait-il eu ?
avions-nous eu ?
aviez-vous eu ?
avaient-ils eu ?

Had I not had ? etc.

N'avais-je pas eu ?
n'avais-tu pas eu ?
n'avait-il pas eu ?
n'avions-nous pas eu ?
n'aviez-vous pas eu ?
n'avaient-ils pas eu ?

PAST DEFINITE OR PRETERPERFECT.

I had not, etc.

Je n'eus pas
tu n'eus pas
il n'eut pas
nous n'eûmes pas
vous n'eûtes pas
ils n'eurent pas

Had I ? etc.

Eus-je ?
eus-tu ?
eut-il ?
eûmes-nous ?
eûtes-vous ?
eurent-ils ?

Had I not ? etc.

N'eus-je pas ?
n'eus-tu pas ?
n'eut-il pas ?
n'eûmes-nous pas ?
n'eûtes-vous pas ?
n'eurent-ils pas ?

* The *e* of *je* is not dropped in the Interrogation before a vowel.

PAST ANTERIOR.

<i>I had not had, etc.</i>	<i>Had I had ? etc.</i>	<i>Had I not had ? etc.</i>
Je n'eus pas eu	Eus-je eu ?	N'eus-je pas eu ?
tu n'eus pas eu	eus-tu eu ?	n'eus-tu pas eu ?
il n'eut pas eu	eut-il eu ?	n'eut-il pas eu ?
nous n'eûmes pas eu	eûmes-nous eu ?	n'eûmes-nous pas eu ?
vous n'eûtes pas eu	eûtes-vous eu ?	n'eûtes-vous pas eu ?
ils n'eurent pas eu	eurent-ils eu ?	n'eurent-ils pas eu ?

FUTURE.

<i>I shall not have, etc.</i>	<i>Shall I have ? etc.</i>	<i>Shall I not have ? etc.</i>
Je n'aurai pas	Aurai-je ?	N'aurai-je pas ?
tu n'auras pas	auras-tu ?	n'auras-tu pas ?
il n'aura pas	aura-t-il ?	n'aura-t-il pas ?
nous n'aurons pas	aurons-nous ?	n'aurons-nous pas ?
vous n'aurez pas	aurez-vous ?	n'aurez-vous pas ?
ils n'auront pas	auront-ils ?	n'auront-ils pas ?

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

<i>I shall not have had, etc.</i>	<i>Shall I have had ? etc.</i>	<i>Shall I not have had ? etc.</i>
Je n'aurai pas eu	Aurai-je eu ?	N'aurai-je pas eu ?
tu n'auras pas eu	auras-tu eu ?	n'auras-tu pas eu ?
il n'aura pas eu	aura-t-il eu ?	n'aura-t-il pas eu ?
nous n'aurons pas eu	aurons-nous eu ?	n'aurons-nous pas eu ?
vous n'aurez pas eu	aurez-vous eu ?	n'aurez-vous pas eu ?
ils n'auront pas eu	auront-ils eu ?	n'auront-ils pas eu ?

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

<i>I should not have, etc.</i>	<i>Should I have ? etc.</i>	<i>Should I not have ? etc.</i>
Je n'aurais pas	Aurais-je ?	N'aurais-je pas ?
tu n'aurais pas	aurais-tu ?	n'aurais-tu pas ?
il n'aurait pas	aurait-il ?	n'aurait-il pas ?
nous n'aurions pas	aurions-nous ?	n'aurions-nous pas ?
vous n'auriez pas	auriez-vous ?	n'auriez-vous pas ?
ils n'auraient pas	auraient-ils ?	n'auraient-ils pas ?

CONDITIONAL PAST.

<i>I should not have had, etc.</i>	<i>Should I have had ? etc.</i>	<i>Should I not have had, etc.</i>
Je n'aurais pas eu	Aurais-je eu ?	N'aurais-je pas eu ?
tu n'aurais pas eu	aurais-tu eu ?	n'aurais-tu pas eu ?
il n'aurait pas eu	aurait-il eu ?	n'aurait-il pas eu ?
nous n'aurions pas eu	aurions-nous eu ?	n'aurions-nous pas eu ?
vous n'auriez pas eu	auriez-vous eu ?	n'auriez-vous pas eu ?
ils n'auraient pas eu	auraient-ils eu ?	n'auraient-ils pas eu ?
<i>or</i>	<i>or</i>	<i>or</i>
Je n'eusse pas eu	Eussé-je eu ?	N'eussé-je pas eu ?
tu n'eusses pas eu	eusses-tu eu ?	n'eusses-tu pas eu ?
il n'eût pas eu	eût-il eu ?	n'eût-il pas eu ?
nous n'eussions pas eu	eussions-nous eu ?	n'eussions-nous pas eu ?
vous n'eussiez pas eu	eussiez-vous eu ?	n'eussiez-vous pas eu ?
ils n'eussent pas eu	eussent-ils eu ?	n'eussent-ils pas eu ?

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Negatively.

PRESENT.	PAST.
<i>Have not</i>	<i>Have not had.</i>
N'aie pas	N'aie pas eu
n'ayons pas	n'ayons pas eu
n'ayez pas	n'ayez pas eu

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Negatively.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.	PAST.
<i>That I may not have, etc.</i>	<i>That I may not have had, etc.</i>
Que je n'aie pas	Que je n'aie pas eu
que tu n'aies pas	que tu n'aies pas eu
qu'il n'ait pas	qu'il n'ait pas eu
que nous n'ayons pas	que nous n'ayons pas eu
que vous n'ayez pas	que vous n'ayez pas eu
qu'ils n'aient pas	qu'ils n'aient pas eu

IMPERFECT.

That I might not have, etc.

Que je n'eusse pas
 que tu n'eusses pas
 qu'il n'eût pas
 que nous n'eussions pas
 que vous n'eussiez pas
 qu'ils n'eussent pas

PLUPERFECT.

That I might not have had, etc

Que je n'eusse pas eu
 que tu n'eusses pas eu
 qu'il n'eût pas eu
 que nous n'eussions pas eu
 que vous n'eussiez pas eu
 qu'ils n'eussent pas eu.

*Conjugation of the auxiliary verb être (=to be), negatively,
 interrogatively, and interrogatively with a negation.*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

*Negatively.*PRESENT.—*Ne pas être or n'être pas, not to be.*PAST.—*N'avoir pas été, not to have been.*

PARTICIPLES.

*Negatively.*PRESENT.—*N'étant pas, not being.*PAST.—*N'ayant pas été, not having been.*FUTURE.—*Ne devant pas être, not about to be.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

*Negatively.**Interrogatively.**Interrog. with a neg.**I am not, etc.**Am I? etc.**Am I not? etc.**Je ne suis pas**Suis-je?**Ne suis-je pas?**tu n'es pas**es-tu?**n'es-tu pas?**il n'est pas**est-il?**n'est-il pas?**nous ne sommes pas**sommes-nous?**ne sommes-nous**pas?**vous n'êtes pas**êtes-vous?**n'êtes-vous pas?**ils ne sont pas**sont-ils?**ne sont-ils pas?*

PAST INDEFINITE.

<i>I have not been, etc.</i>	<i>Have I been? etc.</i>	<i>Have I not been? etc.</i>
Je n'ai pas été	AI-je été?	N'ai-je pas été?
tu n'as pas été	as-tu été?	n'as-tu pas été?
il n'a pas été	a-t-il été?	n'a-t-il pas été?
nous n'avons pas été	avons-nous été?	n'avons-nous pas été?
vous n'avez pas été	avez-vous été?	n'avez-vous pas été?
ils n'ont pas été	ont-ils été?	n'ont-ils pas été?

IMPERFECT.

<i>I was not, etc.</i>	<i>Was I? etc.</i>	<i>Was I not? etc.</i>
Je n'étais pas	Étais-je?	N'étais-je pas?
tu n'étais pas	étais-tu?	n'étais-tu pas?
il n'était pas	était-il?	n'était-il pas?
nous n'étions pas	étions-nous?	n'étions-nous pas?
vous n'étiez pas	étiez-vous?	n'étiez-vous pas?
ils n'étaient pas	étaient-ils?	n'étaient-ils pas?

PLUPERFECT.

<i>I had not been, etc.</i>	<i>Had I been? etc.</i>	<i>Had I not been? etc.</i>
Je n'avais pas été	Avais-je été?	N'avais-je pas été?
tu n'avais pas été	avais-tu été?	n'avais-tu pas été?
il n'avait pas été	avait-il été?	n'avait-il pas été?
nous n'avions pas été	avions-nous été?	n'avions-nous pas été?
vous n'aviez pas été	aviez-vous été?	n'aviez-vous pas été?
ils n'avaient pas été	avaient-ils été?	n'avaient-ils pas été?

PAST DEFINITE or PRETERPERFECT.

<i>I was not, etc.</i>	<i>Was I? etc.</i>	<i>Was I not? etc.</i>
Je ne fus pas	Fus-je?	Ne fus-je pas?
tu ne fus pas	fus-tu?	ne fus-tu pas?
il ne fut pas	fut-il?	ne fut-il pas?
nous ne fûmes pas	fûmes-nous?	ne fûmes-nous pas?
vous ne fûtes pas	fûtes-vous?	ne fûtes-vous pas?
ils ne furent pas	furent-ils?	ne furent-ils pas?

PAST ANTERIOR.

I had not been, etc.

Je **n'eus pas** été
tu **n'eus pas** été
il **n'eut pas** été
nous **n'eûmes pas**
été

vous **n'eûtes pas** été
ils **n'eurent pas** été

Had I been ? etc.

Eus-je été ?
eus-tu été ?
eut-il été ?
eûmes-nous été ?

eûtes-vous été ?
eurent-ils été ?

Had I not been ? etc.

M'eus-je pas été ?
n'eus-tu pas été ?
n'eut-il pas été ?
n'eûmes-nous pas
été ?

n'eûtes-vous pas été ?
n'eurent-ils pas été ?

FUTURE.

I shall not be, etc.

Je **ne serai pas**
tu **ne seras pas**
il **ne sera pas**
nous **ne serons pas**
vous **ne serez pas**
ils **ne seront pas**

Shall I be ? etc.

Serai-je ?
seras-tu ?
sera-t-il ?
serons-nous ?
serez-vous ?
seront-ils ?

Shall I not be ? etc.

Ne serai-je pas ?
ne seras-tu pas ?
ne sera-t-il pas ?
ne serons-nous pas ?
ne serez-vous pas ?
ne seront-ils pas ?

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

I shall not have been, etc.

Je **n'aurai pas** été
tu **n'auras pas** été
il **n'aura pas** été
nous **n'aurons pas**
été

vous **n'aurez pas** été

ils **n'auront pas** été

Shall I have been ? etc.

Aurai-je été ?
auras-tu été ?
aura-t-il été ?
aurons-nous été ?

aurez-vous été ?

auront-ils été ?

Shall I not have been ? etc.

M'aurai-je pas été ?
n'auras-tu pas été ?
n'aura-t-il pas été ?
n'aurons-nous pas
été ?

n'aurez-vous pas
été ?

n'auront-ils pas été ?

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

I should not be, etc.

Je **ne serais pas**
tu **ne serais pas**
il **ne serait pas**
nous **ne serions pas**
vous **ne seriez pas**
ils **ne seraient pas**

Should I be ? etc.

Serais-je ?
serais-tu ?
serait-il ?
serions-nous ?
seriez-vous ?
seraient-ils ?

Should I not be ? etc.

Ne serais-je pas ?
ne serais-tu pas ?
ne serait-il pas ?
ne serions-nous pas ?
ne seriez-vous pas ?
ne seraient-ils pas ?

CONDITIONAL PAST.

<i>I should not have been, etc.</i>	<i>Should I have been? etc.</i>	<i>Should I not have been? etc.</i>
Je n'aurais pas été	Aurais-je été?	N'aurais-je pas été?
tu n'aurais pas été	aurais-tu été?	n'aurais-tu pas été?
il n'aurait pas été	aurait-il été?	n'aurait-il pas été?
nous n'aurions pas été	aurions-nous été?	n'aurions-nous pas été?
vous n'auriez pas été	auriez-vous été?	n'auriez-vous pas été?
ils n'auraient pas été	auraient-ils été?	n'auraient-ils pas été?
or	or	or
Je n'eusse pas été	Eussé-je été?	N'eussé-je pas été?
tu n'eusses pas été	eusses-tu été?	n'eusses-tu pas été?
il n'eût pas été	eût-il été?	n'eût-il pas été?
nous n'eussions pas été	eussions-nous été?	n'eussions-nous pas été?
vous n'eussiez pas été	eussiez-vous été?	n'eussiez-vous pas été?
ils n'eussent pas été	eussent-ils été?	n'eussent-ils pas été?

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Negatively.

PRESENT.

Do thou not be.
Ne sois pas
ne soyons pas
ne soyez pas

PAST.

Have not been.
N'aie pas été
n'ayons pas été
n'ayez pas été.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Negatively.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

That I may not be, etc.

Que je ne sois pas
que tu ne sois pas
qu'il ne soit pas
que nous ne soyons pas
que vous ne soyez pas
qu'ils ne soient pas

IMPERFECT.

That I might not be.

Que je ne fusse pas
que tu ne fusses pas
qu'il ne fût pas
que nous ne fussions pas
que vous ne fussiez pas
qu'ils ne fussent pas

PAST.

That I may not have been, etc.

Que je n'aie pas été
que tu n'aies pas été
qu'il n'ait pas été
que nous n'ayons pas été
que vous n'ayez pas été
qu'ils n'aient pas été

PLUPERFECT.

That I might not have been.

Que je n'eusse pas été
que tu n'eusses pas été
qu'il n'eût pas été
que nous n'eussions pas été
que vous n'eussiez pas été
qu'ils n'eussent pas été.

Models of Reflexive Verbs conjugated negatively, interrogatively, and interrogatively with a negation.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

Negatively.

<i>Ne pas se réjouir, not to rejoice</i>	<i>ne pas s'apercevoir, not to perceive</i>	<i>ne pas se perdre, not to lose one's self.</i>
--	---	--

PAST.

<i>Ne pas s'être réjoui, not to have rejoiced</i>	<i>ne pas s'être aperçu, not to have perceived</i>	<i>ne pas s'être perdu, not to have lost one's self.</i>
---	--	--

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Negatively.

<i>Ne se réjouissant pas, not rejoicing</i>	<i>ne s'apercevant pas, not perceiving</i>	<i>ne se perdant pas, not losing one's self.</i>
---	--	--

PAST.

<i>Réjoui, -ie, -is, or -ies, rejoiced</i>	<i>aperçu, -ue, -us, or -ues, perceived</i>	<i>perdu, -ue, -us, or -ues, lost</i>
<i>ne s'étant pas réjoui, not having rejoiced</i>	<i>ne s'étant pas aperçu, not having perceived</i>	<i>ne s'étant pas perdu, not having lost one's self.</i>

FUTURE.

<i>Ne devant pas se réjouir, not about to rejoice</i>	<i>ne devant pas s'apercevoir, not about to perceive</i>	<i>ne devant pas se perdre, not about to lose one's self.</i>
---	--	---

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Negatively.

I do not rejoice, etc.

Je ne me réjouis pas

tu ne te réjouis pas

il ne se réjouit pas

nous ne nous réjouis-
sous pas

vous ne vous réjouissez
pas

ils ne se réjouissent
pas

Interrogatively.

Do I perceive? etc.

M'aperçois-je?

t'aperçois-tu?

s'aperçoit-il?

nous apercevons-nous?

vous apercevez-vous?

s'aperçoivent-ils?

Interrog. with a neg.

Do I not lose myself?

Est-ce que je ne me
perds pas?

ne te perds-tu pas?

ne se perd-il pas?

ne nous perdons-nous
pas?

ne vous perdez-vous
pas?

ne se perdent-ils pas

PAST INDEFINITE.

I have not rejoiced, etc.

Je ne me suis pas réjoui
tu ne t'es pas réjoui
il ne s'est pas réjoui
nous ne nous sommes
pas réjouis
vous ne vous êtes pas
réjouis
ils ne se sont pas réjouis

Have I perceived? etc.

Me suis-je aperçu?
t'es-tu aperçu?
s'est-il aperçu?
nous sommes-nous
aperçus?
vous êtes-vous aper-
çus?
se sont-ils aperçus?

Have I not lost myself? etc.

Ne me suis-je pas perdu?
ne t'es-tu pas perdu?
ne s'est-il pas perdu?
ne nous sommes-nous
pas perdus?
ne vous êtes-vous pas
perdus? [dus?
ne se sont-ils pas per-

IMPERFECT.

I was not rejoicing, etc.

Je ne me réjouissais pas
tu ne te réjouissais pas
il ne se réjouissait pas
nous ne nous réjouis-
sions pas
vous ne vous réjouis-
siez pas [pas
ils ne se réjouissaient

Was I perceiving? etc.

M'apercevais-je?
t'apercevais-tu?
s'apercevait-il?
nous apercevions-
nous?
vous aperceviez-vous?
s'apercevaient-ils?

*Was I not losing myself?
etc.*

Ne me perdais-je pas?
ne te perdais-tu pas?
ne se perdait-il pas?
ne nous perdions-nous
pas?
ne vous perdiez-vous
pas?
ne se perdaient-ils pas?

PLUPERFECT.

I had not rejoiced, etc.

Je ne m'étais pas réjoui
tu ne t'étais pas réjoui
il ne s'était pas réjoui
nous ne nous étions pas
réjouis
vous ne vous étiez pas
réjouis [jouis
ils ne s'étaient pas ré-

Had I perceived? etc.

M'étais-je aperçu?
t'étais-tu aperçu?
s'était-il aperçu?
nous étions-nous aper-
çus?
vous étiez-vous aper-
çus?
s'étaient-ils aperçus?

Had I not lost myself? etc.

Nem'étais-je pas perdu?
ne t'étais-tu pas perdu?
ne s'était-il pas perdu?
ne nous étions-nous pas
perdus?
ne vous étiez-vous pas
perdus? [dus?
ne s'étaient-ils pas per-

PAST DEFINITE OR PRETERPERFECT.

I did not rejoice, etc.

Je ne me réjouis pas
tu ne te réjouis pas
il ne se réjouit pas
nous ne nous réjouîmes
pas [pas
vous ne vous réjouîtes
ils ne se réjouirent pas

Did I perceive? etc.

M'aperçus-je?
t'aperçus-tu?
s'aperçut-il?
nous aperçûmes-nous?
vous aperçûtes-vous?
s'aperçurent-ils?

Did I not lose myself? etc.

Ne me perdis-je pas?
ne te perdis-tu pas?
ne se perdit-il pas?
ne nous perdimus-nous
pas? [pas?
ne vous perdités-vous?
ne se perdirent-ils pas?

PAST ANTERIOR.

I had not rejoiced, etc.

Je ne me fus pas réjoui
tu ne te fus pas réjoui
il ne se fut pas réjoui
nous ne nous fûmes pas
réjouis
vous ne vous fûtes pas
réjouis [réjouis
ils ne se furent pas

Had I perceived? etc.

Me fus-je aperçu?
te fus-tu aperçu?
se fut-il aperçu?
nous fûmes-nous aper-
çus?
vous fûtes-vous aper-
çus?
se furent-ils aperçus?

Had I not lost myself? etc.

Ne me fus-je pas perdu?
ne te fus-tu pas perdu?
ne se fut-il pas perdu?
ne nous fûmes-nous pas
perdus?
ne vous fûtes-vous pas
perdus? [perdus?
ne se furent-ils pas

FUTURE.

I shall not rejoice, etc.

Je ne me réjouirai pas
tu ne te réjouiras pas
il ne se réjouira pas
nous ne nous réjou-
irons pas [pas
vous ne vous réjouirez
ils ne se réjouiront pas

Shall I perceive?
etc.

M'apercevrai-je?
t'apercevras-tu?
s'apercevra-t-il?
nous apercevrons-
nous?
vous apercevrez-vous?
s'apercevront-ils?

Shall I not lose myself?
etc.

Ne me perdrai-je pas?
ne te perdras-tu pas?
ne se perdra-t-il pas?
ne nous perdrons-nous
pas? [pas?
ne vous perdrez-vous
ne se perdront-ils pas?

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

I shall not have rejoiced,
*etc.**Je ne me serai pas réjoui*

tu ne te seras pas réjoui
il ne se sera pas réjoui
nous ne nous serons pas
réjouis
vous ne vous serez pas
réjouis [réjouis
ils ne se seront pas

Shall I have perceived?
etc.

Me serai-je aperçu?
te seras-tu aperçu?
se sera-t-il aperçu?
nous serons-nous aper-
çus?
vous serez-vous aper-
çus?
se seront-ils aperçus?

Shall I not have lost
myself? etc.

Ne me serai-je pas per-
du?
ne te seras-tu pas perdu?
ne se sera-t-il pas perdu?
ne nous serons-nous
pas perdus?
ne vous serez-vous pas
perdus? [dus?
ne se seront-ils pas per-

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I should not rejoice,
etc.

Je ne me réjouirais pas
tu ne te réjouirais pas
il ne se réjouirait pas
nous ne nous réjou-
irions pas
vous ne vous réjou-
iriez pas [pas
ils ne se réjouiraient pas

Should I perceive?
etc.

M'apercevrais-je?
t'apercevrais-tu?
s'apercevrait-il?
nous apercevriions-
nous?
vous apercevriez-
vous?
s'apercevraient-ils?

Should I not lose myself?
etc.

Ne me perdrais-je pas?
ne te perdrais-tu pas?
ne se perdrait-il pas?
ne nous perdriions-nous
pas?
ne vous perdriez-vous
pas? [pas?
ne se perdraient-ils

PAST.

I should not have rejoiced, etc.

Je ne me serais pas réjoui

tu ne te serais pas réjoui
il ne se serait pas réjoui
nous ne nous serions pas réjouis

vous ne vous seriez pas réjouis [réjouis
ils ne se seraient pas

or

je ne me fusse pas réjoui

tu ne te fusses pas réjoui
il ne se fût pas réjoui
nous ne nous fussions pas réjouis

vous ne vous fussiez pas réjouis
ils ne se fussent pas réjouis

Should I have perceived ? etc.

Me serais-je aperçu ?

te serais-tu aperçu ?

se serait-il aperçu ?

nous serions-nous aperçus ?

vous seriez-vous aperçus ?

se seraient-ils aperçus ?

or

me fussé-je aperçu ?

te fusses-tu aperçu ?

se fût-il aperçu ?

nous fussions-nous aperçus ?

vous fussiez-vous aperçus ?

se fussent-ils aperçus ?

Should I not have lost myself ? etc.

Ne me serais-je pas perdu ? [du ?

ne te serais-tu pas perdu ?
ne se serait-il pas perdu ?

ne nous serions-nous pas perdus ?

ne vous seriez-vous pas perdus ? [perdus ?

ne se seraient-ils pas perdus ?

or

ne me fussé-je pas perdu ? [du ?

ne te fusses-tu pas perdu ?
ne se fût-il pas perdu ?

ne nous fussions-nous pas perdus ?

ne vous fussiez-vous pas perdus ?

ne se fussent-ils pas perdus ?

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Negatively.

PRESENT.

Do not rejoice, etc.

Ne te réjouis pas [pas

Ne nous réjouissons

Ne vous réjouissez pas

Do not perceive, etc.

Ne t'aperçois pas [pas

Ne nous apercevons

Ne vous apercevez pas

Do not lose thyself, etc.

Ne te perds pas

Ne nous perdons pas

Ne vous perdez pas

PAST.

Have not rejoiced, etc.

Ne te sois pas réjoui

Ne nous soyons pas réjouis [jouis

Ne vous soyez pas ré-

Have not perceived, etc.

Ne te sois pas aperçu

Ne nous soyons pas aperçus [çus

Ne vous soyez pas aper-

Have not lost thyself, etc.

Ne te sois pas perdu

Ne nous soyons pas perdus [dus

Ne vous soyez pas per-

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Negatively.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

That I may not rejoice, etc.

Que je ne me réjoiss

pas [pas
que tu ne te réjoisses

qu'il ne se réjoisse pas

That I may not perceive, etc.

Que je ne m'aperçoiv

pas [pas
que tu ne t'aperçoives

qu'il ne s'aperçoive pas

That I may not lose myself, etc.

Que je ne me perde pas

que tu ne te perdes pas

qu'il ne se perde pas

que nous ~~ne~~ nous ré-
jouissions pas
que vous ~~ne~~ vous ré-
jouissiez pas [pas
qu'ils ~~ne~~ se réjouissent

que nous ~~ne~~ nous aper-
cevions pas
que vous ~~ne~~ vous aper-
ceviez pas [pas
qu'ils ~~ne~~ s'aperçoivent

que nous ~~ne~~ nous per-
dions pas
que vous ~~ne~~ vous per-
diez pas
qu'ils ~~ne~~ se perdent pas

PAST.

*That I may not have re-
joiced, etc.*

Que je ~~ne~~ me sois pas
réjoui

que tu ~~ne~~ te sois pas ré-
joui

qu'il ~~ne~~ se soit pas ré-
joui

que nous ~~ne~~ nous
soyons pas réjouis

que vous ~~ne~~ vous soyez
pas réjouis

qu'ils ~~ne~~ se soient pas
réjouis

*That I may not have per-
ceived, etc.*

Que je ~~ne~~ me sois pas
aperçu

que tu ~~ne~~ te sois pas
aperçu

qu'il ~~ne~~ se soit pas aper-
çu

que nous ~~ne~~ nous
soyons pas aperçus

que vous ~~ne~~ vous soyez
pas aperçus

qu'ils ~~ne~~ se soient pas
aperçus

*That I may not have lost
myself, etc.*

Que je ~~ne~~ me sois pas
perdu

que tu ~~ne~~ te sois pas
perdu

qu'il ~~ne~~ se soit pas per-
du

que nous ~~ne~~ nous
soyons pas perdus

que vous ~~ne~~ vous soyez
pas perdus

qu'ils ~~ne~~ se soient pas
perdus

IMPERFECT.

*That I might not rejoice,
etc.*

Que je ~~ne~~ me réjouisse
pas [pas

que tu ~~ne~~ te réjouisses
qu'il ~~ne~~ se réjouit pas

que nous ~~ne~~ nous réjou-
issions pas

que vous ~~ne~~ vous réjou-
issiez pas [pas

qu'ils ~~ne~~ se réjouissent

*That I might not per-
ceive, etc.*

Que je ~~ne~~ m'aperçusse
pas [pas

que tu ~~ne~~ t'aperçusses
qu'il ~~ne~~ s'aperçût pas

que nous ~~ne~~ nous aper-
çussions pas

que vous ~~ne~~ vous aper-
çussiez pas [pas

qu'ils ~~ne~~ se s'aperçussent

*That I might not lose
myself, etc.*

Que je ~~ne~~ me perdisse
pas [pas

que tu ~~ne~~ te perdisse
qu'il ~~ne~~ se perdit pas

que nous ~~ne~~ nous per-
dissons pas

que vous ~~ne~~ vous per-
dissez pas [pas

qu'ils ~~ne~~ se perdissent

PLUPERFECT.

*That I might not have
rejoiced, etc.*

Que je ~~ne~~ me sois pas
réjoui

que tu ~~ne~~ te sois pas ré-
joui

qu'il ~~ne~~ se soit pas ré-
joui

que nous ~~ne~~ nous
soyons pas réjouis

que vous ~~ne~~ vous soyez
pas réjouis

qu'ils ~~ne~~ se soient pas
réjouis

*That I might not have
perceived, etc.*

Que je ~~ne~~ me sois pas
aperçu

que tu ~~ne~~ te sois pas
aperçu

qu'il ~~ne~~ se soit pas aper-
çu

que nous ~~ne~~ nous
soyons pas aperçus

que vous ~~ne~~ vous soyez
pas aperçus

qu'ils ~~ne~~ se soient pas
aperçus

*That I might not have
lost myself, etc.*

Que je ~~ne~~ me sois pas
perdu

que tu ~~ne~~ te sois pas
perdu

qu'il ~~ne~~ se soit pas per-
du

que nous ~~ne~~ nous
soyons pas perdus

que vous ~~ne~~ vous soyez
pas perdus

qu'ils ~~ne~~ se soient pas
perdus

INDEX

The numbers refer to the paragraphs when the word page is not expressed.

- able** (suffix), 73.
accents, 6, 20; **tonia**, 24.
active verbs, 184; used impersonally, 168.
ade (suffix), 40, 44.
adjective, 49; qualifying, 50; determinative, 50, 77; indefinite, 50; formation of fem. in, 52 and foll.; formation of, 69 and foll.; derivative, 70 and foll.; agreement of, 74 and foll.; numeral, 78 and foll.; demonstrative, 82; possessive, 83; indefinite, 84, 111; interrogative, 107; used as adverb, 198.
adverb, 187; of place, 189; of time, 190; of manner, 191; how formed, 191, 192; adjectives used as, 193; comparison of, 194; of quantity, 195; of interrogation, 196; of affirmation, 197; of negation, 198; of doubt, 199.
adverbial locutions, 200.
age (suffix), 40, 44.
aille (suffix), 42.
ain (suffix), 40, 71.
aller, 169; **s'en aller**, 169.
alphabet, page 7.
ance (suffix), 44.
anti (prefix), 69.
apostrophe, 21.
après (prefix), 39.
archi (prefix), 69.
ard (suffix), 40, 73.
arrière (prefix), 39.
article, 45; definite, 46 and foll.; indefinite, 48; used in French when some or any is meant in English, 48.
as (suffix), 42.
asse (suffix), in verbs, 179.
at (suffix), 40.
âtre (suffix), 72.
aud (suffix), 72.
auxiliary verbs, 127, 132; with neuter verbs, 163; with reflexive verbs, 168.
avoir, 132; **y avoir**, page 110.
avant (prefix), 39.
Basque, page 1.
bénir, 170.
bien (prefix), 69.
bis (prefix), 24.
Breton (Bas-), page 1.
Burgundian, pages 1, 3.
cardinal adjectives, 79, 81.
Catalonian, page 1.
ce, 100.
cedilla, 22.
Celtic, page 4.
celui qui, 100.
cer, verbs ending in, 167.
collective numbers, 81.
comparative in adjectives, 66; irregular, 67; in adverbs, 194.
complement, 113, 114; direct, 115; indirect, 116.
conditional mood, 121.
conjugation, 130, 131; first, page 79; second, page 83; third, page 86; fourth, page 82; interrogative, 136 and foll.; negative, 141; interrogative and negative, 142; passive, page 99; neuter, page 102; reflexive, page 105; im-

- personal, page 109; observations on first conj., 166 and foll.; on second conj., with imperfect in *issais*, 170; on 2nd (direct) conj., 171; irregular, page 112 and foll.
- conjunction**, 211 and foll.; government of, 216.
- conjunctive locutions**, 214.
- consonants**, 3, 11 and foll.
- contre** (prefix), 89.
- defective verbs**, 165.
- demi** (prefix), 69.
- demonstrative**, *see* adjective and pronoun.
- derivative tenses**, 147.
- determinative**, *see* adjective and pronoun.
- devoir**, page 97, note.
- dieresis**, 21.
- diphthong**, 9.
- é, êe** (suffix), 40, 71.
- eau, elle** (suffix), 42.
- éger** (verbs ending in), 166.
- eler** (verbs ending in), 166.
- elet** (suffix), 72.
- en** (pronoun), 92.
- entre** (prefix), 89.
- envoyer**, 169.
- er, ier** (suffix), 40, 71.
- esse** (suffix), 40, 43.
- et** (suffix), 42, 72.
- eter** (verbs ending in), 166.
- être**, page 75; with neuter verbs, 153.
- eur** (suffix), 44.
- eux** (suffix), 71.
- feminine** (formation of) in nouns, 30 and foll.; in adjectives, 57 and foll.
- Flemish**, page 1.
- fleurir**, 170.
- foreign words**, page 5.
- French patois**, page 2; dialect, page 3; learned, page 5; popular, page 5.
- future tense**, 123, 126.
- Gascon**, pages 2, 4.
- gender**, 29; formation of *fem* in nouns, 30 and foll.; in adjectives, 52 and foll.
- ger** (verbs ending in), 167.
- grammar** (definition), page 5.
- hair**, 170.
- hyphen**, 23.
- idiomatic tenses**, 143.
- ie (erie)** (suffix), 40, 43.
- if** (suffix), 73.
- imperative mood**, 121.
- imperfect tense**, 125.
- impersonal verbs**, 161; their pronoun subject, 162; active or neuter verbs used as impersonal, 163.
- in** (prefix), 69; (suffix), 71.
- indefinite**, *see* adjective and pronoun.
- indicative mood**, 121.
- infinitive mood**, 121.
- interjection**, 217; how formed, 218.
- interrogative**, *see* adjective and pronoun.
- irregular verbs**, 165; 1st conj., 166 and foll.; 2nd conj. with imperfect in *issais*, 170; 3rd. conj. (direct), 171.
- is** (suffix), 44.
- ise** (suffix), 43.
- ison** (suffix), 44.
- isseur** (suffix), 44.
- ite** (suffix), 40.
- Italian**, page 3.
- Languedocien**, pages 2, 4.
- Latin** (popular), pages 2, 3, 4; classical, 2.
- leur**, 92.
- Limousin**, pages 2, 4.
- locutions**, adverbial, 200; prepositive, 203; how formed, 206; conjunctive, 214.
- Lorrain**, page 1.

mal (prefix), 69.
ment (suffix), 44.
mi (prefix), 39.
moods, 121.

neuter verbs, 152; their auxiliary, 153; used impersonally, 163.

non (prefix), 39.

Norman, pages 1, 3.

noun, *see* substantive.

number, 81; formation of plur. in nouns, 82 and foll.; in adjectives, 62 and foll.; in verbs, 119.

numbers, 81.

numeral adjectives, 78, 81.

object, 113; direct, 115; indirect, 116.

Oc (*langue d'*) pages 3, 4.

Oil (*langue d'*), pages 3, 4.

oir (suffix), 44.

on (suffix), 42, 44; in verbs, 179.

ordinal adjectives, 80, 81.

orthographic signs, 20.

ot (suffix), 42, 72; in verbs, 179.

participle, 183; present, 184; used as an adjective, 185.

passive verbs, 149 and foll.; the reflexive used instead, 149, 160.

past anterior, 125.

past definite, 125.

past indefinite, 125.

past participle of passive verbs, 151; of neuter verbs, 154; of reflexive verbs, 159; used as an adjective, 186.

past tense, 123.

personal pronouns, *see* **personal nouns**.

persons in verbs, 120.

Picard, pages 1, 3.

pluperfect, 125.

plural (formation of) in nouns, 82 and foll.; in adjectives, 62 and foll.

positive, 65.

possessive, how expressed in French, 48; *see* adjective and pronoun.

pouvoir, page 97, note.

prefixes, 39.

prepositions, 201 and foll.; how formed, 205; government of, 207, 210; their place, 208; repetition of, 209.

prepositive locutions, 203, 206.

present participle, 184; used as an adjective, 185.

present tense, 123.

preterite, *see* past.

primitive tenses, 147.

pronouns, 85; personal, 89; conjunctive, 89; where placed, 90, 92; disjunctive, 93; used as subject, 94; used as object, 95; reflexive, 96; demonstrative, 97 and foll.; possessive, 101; relative, 102 and foll.; interrogative, 106 and foll.; indefinite, 109 and foll.

Provençal, pages 2, 4; Patois, page 2.

qualifying adjectives, *see* adjectives.

que, 104, 105, 106.

qui, 104, 106.

reflexive verbs, 155; how conjugated, 157; their auxiliary, 158; their past participle, 159; instead of the passive, 149, 160.

Romanco language, pages 3, 5.

sans (prefix), 39.

some, translated by *du*, &c., 48.

- sous** (prefix), 39, 69.
Spanish, page 3.
speech (parts of), 25.
stem, 118.
subject, 113; agreement of verb with, 180 and foll.
subjunctive mood, 121.
substantive, 26 and foll.; formation of the fem., 20 and foll.; of the plural, 31 and foll.; formation of substantives, 37; derivative, 38; compound, 39; formed from adjectives, 43; from verbs, 44.
suffixes, 40; diminutive, 41, 42.
superlative, 68.
sur (over), 69.
syllables, 16; tonic, 24.
té (suffix), 43.
tenses, 122; simple, 123; compound, 129; formation of, 143 and foll.; primitive and derivative, 147; idiomatic, 148.
termination (of verbs), 118.
trait d'union, 23.
tréma, 21.
u (suffix), 71.
ultra (prefix), 60.
ure (suffix), 43, 44.
verb, 112, auxiliary, 127, 132; active, 134; passive, 149 and foll.; neuter, 152 and foll.; reflexive, 155 and foll.; impersonal, 161; irregular, 164; defective, 165; formation of, 177 and foll.; agreement with the subject, 180 and foll.
vice (prefix), 89.
vouloir, page 97, note.
vowels, 3 and foll.
y (pronoun), 92.
y avoir, page 110.
yer (verbs ending in), 163.

FRENCH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

A

À, prep., at, to
a, v.a., avoir, (page 71)
abattement, s.m., prostration
abattre, v.a., to cast down
abolir, v.a., to abolish
abonner (s') v.r., to subscribe to
abonnement, s.m., subscription
aboucher, v.a., to bring together
aboutir, v.m., to lead
abreuver, v.a., to water
abreuvoir, s.m., horse-pond, watering-place
abrutir, v.a., to make a brute of, to stultify, to besot
absoudre, v.a., to absolve
absurde, adj., absurd
absurdité, s.f., absurdity
acajou, s.m., mahogany
accabler, v.a., to weigh down
accablement, s.m., despondency, dejection
accident, s.m., accident
accompagner, v.a., to accompany
accomplir, v.a., to accomplish
accomplissement, s.m., accomplishment, fulfilment

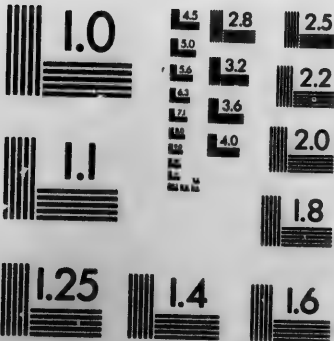
acquiescir, v.m., to run
acheter, v.a., to buy
acheteur, s.m., buyer, purchaser
acide, adj., acid
acidité, s.f., acidity
acier, s.m., steel
aciérie, s.f., steel work
acolyte, s.m., acolyte, clerk
acquéreur, s.m., buyer, purchaser
acquérir, v.a., to acquire
acquitter, (s') v.r., to perform
âcre, adj., acrid, sour
acreté, s.f., acridness, sourness
acteur, s.m., actor
actrice, s.f., actress
admirateur, -trice, s.m.f., admirer
admirer, v.a., to admire
admirateur, -trice, s.m.f., worshipper, adorer
adorer, v.a., to adore, to worship
adoucir, v.a., to soften
adresser (s'), v.r., to apply, to address, to speak to
affadir, v.a., to make tasteless
affaiblir, v.a., to weaken
affaire, s.f., affair, business, difficulty
affaïsser, v.a., to sink

affaissement, s.m., sinking
affermir, v.a., to strengthen
Afrique, s.f., Africa
africain, s.m., African
âge, s.m., age
âgé, e, adj., old, aged
agencer, v.a., to dispose
agencement, s.m., arrangement
agile, adj., nimble
agilité, s.f., nimbleness, agility
agir, v.m., to act
agrandir, v.a., to enlarge
agrandissement, s.m., enlargement
aïeul, s.m., grand-father, ancestor
aigle, s.m., eagle
aiglon, s.m., eaglet
aigre, adj., sour
aigreur, s.f., sourness
aiguille, s.f., needle
aiguillon, s.m., goad
aile, s.f., wing
ailé, e, adj., winged
aileron, s.m., pinion, fin
aimable, adj., kind, amiable, gentle
aimant, aimé, aimant.
Part. pres. j part. past ;
ind. pr. of
aimer, v.a., to like, to love, to be fond of
ainsi, adv., thus, so



MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)



APPLIED IMAGE Inc

1653 East Main Street
Rochester, New York 14609 USA
(716) 482 - 0300 - Phone
(716) 288 - 5989 - Fax

- aisément, *adv.*, easily,
readily
alarmier, *v.a.*, to alarm
allée, *s.f.*, path, alley,
going
aller, *v.n.*, to go
allure, *s.f.*, gait
amaigrir, *v.a.*, to make
thin
amande, *s.f.*, almond
amandier, *s.m.*, almond-
tree
ambition, *s.f.*, ambition
amener, *v.a.*, to bring,
to bring along
Amérique, *s.f.*, America
américain, *s.m.*, Ameri-
can
ami, *s.m.*, friend
amincir, *v.a.*, to make
thin
amiral, *s.m.*, admiral
amollir, *v.a.*, to soften
amollissement, *s.m.*, soft-
ening
amuser, *v.a.*, to amuse
amuser (s') *v.r.*, to amuse
one's self
amusement, *s.m.*, amuse-
ment
analyse, *s.f.*, analysis,
parsing, outline
ancien, *no, adj.*, ancient
ancienneté, *s.f.*, anti-
quity, seniority
ancrer, *s.f.*, anchor
ancrage, *s.m.*, anchorage
âne, *s.m.*, ass
ânon, *s.m.*, young ass
anglais, *s.m.*, English-
man, Briton
annexion, *s.f.*, annexion
antifébrile, *adj.*, antife-
brile
anti-monarchique, *adj.*,
anti-monarchical
anti-religieux, *adj.*, anti-
religious
antisocial, *adj.* anti-
social
août, *s.m.*, August
apaiser, *v.a.*, to appease,
to calm, to soothe
apercevoir, *v.a.*, to per-
ceive, to see
s'apercevoir, *v.r.*, to per-
ceive one's self, to see
each other
s'apercevoir, *v.r.* [de],
to notice, to discover
aperçu, *s.m.*, glimpse
apôtre, *s.m.*, apostle
apostrophe, *s.f.*, apos-
trophe, address, re-
proach
apostropher, *v.a.*, to
apostrophise, to ad-
dress (roughly)
appauvrir, *v.a.*, to im-
poverish
appauvrissement, *s.m.*,
impoverishment
appeler, *v.a.*, to call
appel, *s.m.*, call
applaudir, *v.a.*, to applaud
applaudissement, *s.m.*,
applause
appliquer, (s') *v.r.*, to
apply one's self
apporter, *v.a.*, to bring
âpre, *adj.*, rough, sour,
cager
âpreté, *s.f.*, roughness,
tartness, eagerness
après, *prep.*, after
après-coup, *loc. adv.*,
when too late, after-
wards
après-demain, *loc. adv.*,
the day after to-morrow
après-dîner, *s.m.*, after
dinner, evening
après-midi, *s.f.*, after-
noon
arc, *s.m.*, arc
arcade, *s.f.*, arcade
archidiaconal, *adj.*, archi-
diaconal
archiducal, *adj.*, arch-
ducal
archiepiscopal, *adj.*, at-
chiepiscopal
archi fou, *adj.*, stark mad
argent, *s.m.*, silver,
money
argenterie, *s.f.*, plate
armée, *s.f.*, army
arracher, *v.a.*, to tear
arranger, *v.a.*, to put in
order, to arrange
arrérages, *s.m.*, arrears
arrêter, *v.a.*, to arrest
arrêt, *s.m.*, stoppage,
decree
arrière-boutique, *s.f.*,
back-shop
arrière-garde, *s.f.*, rear-
guard, rear
arrière-neveu, *s.m.*, grand
nephew
arrière-pensée, *s.f.*, men-
tal reservation
arrière-saison, *s.f.*, latter
end of the season,
autumn, decline (of life)
arrivée, *s.f.*, arrival
arriver, *v.n.*, to arrive
arroser, *v.a.*, to water
arsenal, *s.m.*, arsenal
art, *s.m.*, art
artiste, *s.m.*, artist
aspect, *s.m.*, aspect
assassin, *s.m.*, murderer
assassinat, *s.m.*, assas-
sination
asseoir (s') *v.r.*, to sit
down
asservir, *v.a.*, to enslave,
to subdue
assiéger, *v.a.*, to besiege
assiégé, *s.m.*, besieger
assiette, *s.f.*, plate
assiettée, *s.f.*, plateful
assistance, *s.f.*, assistance
assistant, *s.m.*, assistant,
bystander
assister, *v.a.n.*, to assist,
to be present
assortir, *v.a.*, to match,
to sort, to suit

attabler, *v.a.*, to sit at
 table
 attaquer, *v.a.*, to attack
 attendre, *v.a.*, to wait
 for, to expect
 s'attendre, *v.r.*, to expect
 attendu, *prop.*, consider-
 ing
 attendrir, *v.a.*, to soften,
 to move
 attentif, *adj.*, attentive
 attention, *s.f.*, attention
 attirail, *s.m.*, imple-
 ments, apparatus, train
 atitude, *s.f.*, attitude
 aubade, *s.f.*, morning
 serenade
 aube, *s.f.*, dawn
 auberge, *s.f.*, inn
 aubergiste, *s.m.*, inn-
 keeper
 aucun, *adv.*, any, no, none
 aujourd'hui, *adv.*, to-day
 autre, *adj.* and *pr. ind.*,
 other
 autrui, *pr. ind.*, others,
 our neighbour
 Auvergne, *s.f.*, Auvergne
 auvernat, *s.m.*, native
 of Auvergne
 avancé, -e, *adj.*, ad-
 vanced, forward, clear
 avancer, *v.a.n.*, to ad-
 vance
 avant, *prep.*, before
 avantage, *s.m.*, advantage
 avant-coureur, *s.m.*, fore-
 runner
 avant-goût, *s.m.*, foretaste
 avant-poste, *s.m.*, outpost
 avant-propos, *s.m.*, pre-
 face
 avertir, *v.a.*, to warn
 avide, *adj.*, greedy
 avidité, *s.f.*, greediness
 avis, *s.m.*, advice, opinion
 avoine, *s.f.*, oats
 avoir, *v. aux.* and *act.*, to
 have
 avoir, *s.m.*, property

B

Bagatelle, *s.f.*, trifle
 baigner (se), *v.a.*, to
 bathe
 baigneur, -euse, *s.m.f.*,
 bather
 bail, *s.m.*, lease
 bailler, *v.n.*, to yawn
 baillement, *s.m.*, yawning
 baillon, *s.m.*, gag
 bal, *s.m.*, ball (dancing)
 balancer, *v.a.*, to balance
 balançoire, *s.f.*, swing,
 see-saw
 balayer, *v.a.*, to sweep
 balle, *s.f.*, ball
 ballon, *s.m.*, balloon
 ballot, *s.m.*, package
 balustrade, *s.f.*, railing
 balustre, *s.f.*, railing
 bambou, *s.m.*, bamboo
 banal, *adj.*, trite
 banalité, *s.f.*, common-
 place saying
 bandage, *s.m.*, bandage
 bande, *s.f.*, band
 bandelette, *s.f.*, bandlet
 bannir, *v.a.*, to banish, to
 exile
 barbare, *adj.*, barbarous,
 barbarian
 barbarie, *s.f.*, barbarity,
 rudeness
 barbe, *s.f.*, beard
 barbier, *s.m.*, barber
 barbouiller, *v.a.*, to be-
 smear
 barbu, -e, *adj.*, bearded
 barbue, *s.f.*, brill
 barre, *s.f.*, bar, cross-bar
 barreau, *s.m.*, (small bar,
 grating
 bas, *s.m.*, stocking
 bassiner, *v.a.*, to warm
 bât, *s.m.*, pack-saddle
 bûlé, -e, *adj.*, pack sad-
 dled; un âne bûlé, a
 downright ass
 bataille, *s.f.*, battle
 bateau, *s.m.*, boat
 batelier, *s.m.*, boatman
 battant, -e, *adj.*, porte
 battante, slamming
 door
 battre, *v.a.*, to beat
 bavard, *adj.*, talkative
 baver, *v.n.*, to slobber
 beau, bel (*m.*), belle (*f.*),
adj., beautiful, hand-
 some, fine
 beaucoup, *adv.*, much
 beauté, *s.f.*, beauty
 bellâtre, *s.f.*, of insipid
 beauty
 bénir, *v.a.*, to bless
 berger, *s.m.*, shepherd
 bergerie, *s.f.*, fold
 Berlin, *v.p.*, Berlin
 beurre, *s.m.*, butter
 bible, *s.f.*, bible
 bibliothèque, *s.f.*, library,
 book-case
 bien, *adv.*, very,
 much, really
 bien, *s.m.*, good, proper-
 ty, wealth
 bien-aimé, *adj.*, well-
 beloved, dearest
 bienfaisant, *adj.*, bene-
 ficent
 bienfaiteur, -rice, *s.m.f.*,
 benefactor (*m.*), bene-
 factress (*f.*)
 bienheureux, -se, *adj.*,
 blessed
 bijou, -x, *s.m.*, jewel
 bijouterie, *s.f.*, jewellery
 bille, *s.f.*, ball
 billard, *s.m.*, billiards
 billot, *s.m.*, block, clog
 billet, *s.m.*, ticket; billet
 de banque, bank-note
 bisaïeul, *s.m.*, great-
 grandfather
 bissac, *s.m.*, wallet
 blâmer, *v.a.*, to blame
 blanc, -che, *adj.*, white
 blanchir, *v.a.*, to whiten

blanchisseur, *s.m.*,
bleacher
blé, *s.m.*, corn, wheat
blesser, *v.a.*, to wound
blessure, *s.f.*, wound
bleu, *adj.*, blue
bleuir, *v.n.*, to become
blue
bocal, *s.m.*, glass jar,
glass globe
boire, *v.a.*, to drink
boire, *s.m.*, drink, drink-
ing
bois, *s.m.*, wood
boiserie, *s.f.*, wainscot
boiteux, *-se*, *adj.*, lame,
crippled
bombarde, *s.f.*, bombard
bombe, *s.f.*, bomb
bon, *adj.*, good, kind;
les bons, the good
bord, *s.m.*, edge
bordage, *s.m.*, planking
border, *v.a.*, to hem
bordure, *s.f.*, edging,
border, frame
bosse, *s.f.*, lump, hunch
bossu, *-e*, *adj.*, lump-
backed, hunch-backed
botte, *s.f.*, boot
bottier, *s.m.*, bootmaker
bouche, *s.f.*, mouth
bouchee, *s.f.*, mouthful
boucher, *s.m.*, butcher;
boucherie, butcher's
shop
boucher, *v.a.*, to stop
bouchon, *s.m.*, cork
boucle, *s.f.*, buckle, tie,
ring
bouffée, *s.f.*, puff
bouffer, *v.n.*, to swell
bouffir, *v.n.*, to swell out
bouffissure, *s.f.*, swelling,
bombast
bouillir, *v.n.*, to boil,
page 114
boulangier, *s.m.*, baker
boulangerie, *s.f.*, bakery
boule, *s.f.*, ball

boulet, *s.m.*, cannon ball
boulette, *s.f.*, ball (of
bread or paper)
bourg, *s.m.*, borough,
market-town
bourgade, *s.f.*, small mar-
ket-town, village
bourrade, *s.f.*, blow (with
the but end of a
musket)
bourre, *s.f.*, flock, wad
bourse, *s.f.*, purse
boursier, *s.m.*, bursar,
treasurer, stock-jobber
bouteille, *s.f.*, bottle
boutique, *s.f.*, shop
bracelet, *s.m.*, bracelet
branchage, *s.m.*, branches,
boughs
branche, *s.f.*, branch
branchu, *-e*, *adj.*, branch-
ed, branchy
bras, *s.m.*, arm
brigand, *s.m.*, brigand
brigandage, *s.m.*, bri-
gandage
broche, *s.f.*, brooch
brochette, *s.f.*, skewer
broder, *v.a.*, to embroider
brouillard, *adj.*, for blot-
ting; papier-bouillard,
blotting-paper
brouiller, *v.a.*, to mix
together, to upset
bronillon, *s.m.*, rough
draft, blunderer
bruit, *s.m.*, noise, fame,
rumour
brume, *s.f.*, mist, fog
brute, *s.f.*, brute
brute, *adj.*, brutish
bruyant, *adj.*, noisy; *see*
bruire, p. 125
bûche, *s.f.*, log of wood
bûcher, *s.m.*, log-house,
stake
bûcheron, *s.m.*, woodcut-
ter
bûchette, *s.f.*, small log
of wood

bureau, *s.m.*, office
but, *s.m.*, aim, end

C

cache, *s.f.*, hiding place
cachette, *s.f.*, hiding
place
cabine, *s.f.*, cabin
cabinet, *s.m.*, cabinet,
closet, study
cacheter, *v.a.*, to seal
cahier, *s.m.*, copy-book
caillou, *s.m.*, flint, pebble
caisse, *s.f.*, case
caisson, *s.m.*, waggon
camail, *s.m.*, camail
camp, *s.m.*, camp
campagne, *s.f.*, country
campagnard, *s.m.*, coun-
tryman
canal, *s.m.*, canal, channel
canard, *s.m.*, duck
cane, *s.f.*, cane, stick
cannelle, *s.f.*, cinnamon
capital, *s.m.*, main point,
capital, stock
capitaliste, *s.m.*, capitalist
car, *conj.*, for
caractère, *s.m.*, charac-
ter, temper
carafe, *s.f.*, flaggon
carafe, *s.m.*, decanter
cardinal, *s.m.*, cardinal
cardinalat, *s.m.*, cardina-
late
carnaval, *s.m.*, carnival
carpe, *s.f.*, carp
carpillon, *s.m.*, little carp
carrosse, *s.m.*, carriage
carrossier, *s.m.*, carriage
or coachmaker
cascade, *s.f.*, cascade,
waterfall, fall
cause, *s.f.*, cause
cave, *s.f.*, cellar, win
vault
caveau, *s.m.*, cellar,
burial vault

ce, *not, m., cette, f., ces, pl., adj. dem., this, these, that, those*
 ce, *c', pr. dem., 1, he, she, they; 2, it; 3, expletive, ce qui, ce que, what*
 cela, *pr. dem., that*
 celui, (*m.*), celle, (*f.*), ceux, celles, *pl. Pr. dem. subj., he, she, one; pl., they or those; obj., him, her, the one; pl., those*
 celui-ci, (*m.*), celle-ci, (*f.*), ceux-ci, celles-ci, (*m.f. pl.*) *pr. dem., (see page 68)*
 celui-là, (*m.*), celle-là, (*f.*), ceux-là, celles-là, (*m.f. pl.*) *pr. dem., (see page 68)*
 ceinture, *s.f., girdle*
 ceinturon, *s.m., belt*
 céleste, *adj., heavenly, celestial*
 cendre, *s.f., ashes*
 cendrier, *s.m., fender*
 cent, *adj. num., hundred*
 centaine, *s.f., about a hundred*
 cerise, *s.f., cherry*
 cerisier, *s.m., cherry-tree*
 certain, *-e, adj., sure, certain; (ind.) one, some*
 cerveau, *s.m., cerebellum*
 cervelas, *s.m., saveloy*
 chacal, *s.m., jackal*
 chagrin, *s.m., sorrow*
 chaîne, *s.f., chain*
 chaînette, *s.f., little chain*
 chaise, *s.f., chair, seat*
 chaleur, *s.f., heat*
 chambre, *s.f., room*
 champ, *s.m., field*
 chandelle, *s.f., candle*

change, *s.m., exchange, change; lettre de change, bill of exchange, bill*
 chanoine, *s.m., canon, prebendary*
 chanoinesse, *s.f., canoness*
 chant, *s.m., song, singing*
 chanter, *v.a.n., to sing*
 chanteur, *-euse, s.m.f., singer; cantatrice, a professional singer*
 chantonner, *v.n., to hum*
 chape, *s.f., cope*
 chapeau, *s.m., hat*
 chaperon, *s.m., hood, chaperon*
 chaque, *adj. ind., each*
 charger, *v.a., to load*
 charitable, *adj., charitable*
 Charles, *s.m., Charles*
 Charlot, *s.m., Charlie*
 charmant, *adj., charming, delightful*
 charrue, *s.f., plough*
 chasse, *s.f., hunting, sporting*
 chasse, *s.f., shrine*
 chasseur, *s.m., hunter, sportsman*
 châtaigne, *s.f., chestnut*
 châtaignier, *s.m., chestnut-tree*
 châtelain, *-e, adj.,; le seigneur châtelain, the lord of the manor; la dame châtelaine, the lady of the manor; chaîne châtelaine, or châtelaine, chain*
 château, *s.m., little castle*
 chaumière, *s.f., cottage*
 chausser, *v.a., to shoe*
 chaussure, *s.f., boots, shoes*
 chemin, *s.m., way, road*
 chemise, *s.f., shirt*
 cher, *adj., dear, (adv.) dear, dearly*

cheval, *s.m., horse*
 chevalier, *s.m., knight*
 chevelure, *s.f., hair*
 chèvre, *s.f., goat*
 chevreau, *s.m., kid*
 chez, *prep., at or to the house of; allons chez moi, chez nous, let us go home*
 chien, *s.m., dog*
 chimère, *s.f., idle dream*
 chimie, *s.f., chemistry*
 chimiste, *s.m., chemist*
 chômer, *v.n., to be without work*
 chômage, *s.m., want of work, rest*
 chœur, *s.m., chorus, choir*
 choisir, *v.a., to choose, to select*
 chose, *s.f., thing*
 chrétien, *-ne, adj., christian*
 chrétienté, *s.f., christendom*
 chute, *s.f., fall*
 ci, *adv., here; ci-gît, here lies*
 cible, *s.f., target*
 cinquante, *adj. num., fifty*
 cinquantaine, *s.f., about fifty*
 circonstance, *s.f., circumstance*
 citoyen, *s.m., citizen*
 citron, *s.m., citron, lemon*
 citronnelle, *s.f., balm*
 clairement, *adv., clearly*
 cligner, *v.a., to half close (the eyes)*
 clignoter, *v.n., to wink (repeatedly)*
 cliqueter, *v.n., to clack*
 cliquetis, *s.m., din, clang*
 cloche, *s.f., bell*
 clocher, *s.m., bell-tower, steeple*
 cœur, *s.m., heart*
 coffre, *s.m., coffer*
 coffret, *s.m., little coffer*

colère, <i>s.f.</i> , anger	compter, <i>v.a.</i> , to reckon	contenter, <i>v.a.</i> , to content
colombe, <i>s.f.</i> , dove	compteur, <i>s.m.</i> , meter (gas)	contenu, <i>s.m.</i> , contents
colombier, <i>s.m.</i> , dove-cot	Comte, <i>s.m.</i> , Count, Earl	continuel, -le, <i>adj.</i> , continual
colonel, <i>s.m.</i> , colonel	comté, <i>s.m.</i> , earldom, county	contre, <i>prep.</i> , against
colonnade, <i>s.f.</i> , colonnade	Comtesse, <i>s.f.</i> , Countess	contre-amiral, <i>s.m.</i> , rear admiral
colonne, <i>s.f.</i> , column	concert, <i>s.m.</i> , concert	contre-coup, <i>s.m.</i> , rebound, consequence
colorer, <i>v.a.</i> , to colour	concevoir, <i>v.a.</i> , to conceive	contre-maître, <i>s.m.</i> , foreman
coloris, <i>s.m.</i> , colouring	concourir, <i>v.n.</i> , (à), to concur (in); concourir pour, to compete for	contre-marque, <i>s.f.</i> , countermark, check
combattre, <i>v.a.</i> , to combat	condamner, <i>v.a.</i> , to condemn	contre-sens, <i>s.m.</i> , mis-translation
combattant, <i>s.m.</i> , combatant	condescendre, <i>v.n.</i> , to condescend	contrecarrer, <i>v.a.</i> , to thwart
combinaison, <i>s.f.</i> , combination	conducteur, -trice, <i>s.m.f.</i> , conductor, guide, driver	contredire, <i>v.a.</i> , to contradict
combiner, <i>v.a.</i> , to combine	conduire, <i>v.a.</i> , to lead	contrefaire, <i>v.a.</i> , to imitate
comédien, <i>s.m.</i> , comedian, actor	conduite, <i>s.f.</i> , conduct, behaviour	convenance, <i>s.f.</i> , fitness, (pl.), propriety; man-quer aux convenances, to be guilty of impropriety
commander, <i>v.a.n.</i> , to command	confiance, <i>s.f.</i> , confidence, trust	convenir, <i>v.n.</i> , to agree to, to fit
commandant, <i>s.m.</i> , commander	confier, <i>v.a.</i> , to entrust	convoi, <i>s.m.</i> , funeral, convoy, train
comme, <i>adv.</i> , how	confondre, <i>v.a.</i> , to confound; se confondre, to be blended; se confondre en excuses, to be lost in apologies	copie, <i>s.f.</i> , copy
comme, <i>conj.</i> , as	conjugaison, <i>s.f.</i> , conjugation	copiste, <i>s.m.</i> , copyist
comment, <i>adv.</i> , how	conjuguer, <i>v.a.</i> , to conjugate	coquet, -te, <i>adj.</i> , coquettish, elegant
commercer, <i>v.n.</i> , to trade	connaître, <i>v.a.</i> , to know	coquetterie, <i>s.f.</i> , coquetry, flirtation
commerçant, <i>s.m.</i> , trader	conquérant, <i>s.m.</i> , conqueror	coquillage, <i>s.m.</i> , shell-fish
compagnie, <i>s.f.</i> , company, society	conquérir, <i>v.a.</i> , to conquer	coquille, <i>s.f.</i> , shell
comparable, <i>adj.</i> , comparable	conscience, <i>s.f.</i> , conscience	corail, <i>s.m.</i> , coral
comparaison, <i>s.f.</i> , comparison	consentir, <i>v.n.</i> , to consent	cordage, <i>s.m.</i> , cordage, rope
comparer, <i>v.a.</i> , to compare	conséquence, <i>s.f.</i> , consequence	corde, <i>s.f.</i> , cord
compatir, <i>v.n.</i> , to sympathise (with)	consoler, <i>v.a.</i> , to console	cordeau, <i>s.m.</i> , cord
complet, -ète, <i>adj.</i> , complete	consul, <i>s.m.</i> , consul	corder, <i>v.a.</i> , to cord
compliment, <i>s.m.</i> , compliment, congratulation	consulat, <i>s.m.</i> , consulate	corderie, <i>s.f.</i> , rope-making
complot, <i>s.m.</i> , plot	contenir, <i>v.a.</i> , to contain	cordier, <i>s.m.</i> , rope-maker
composer (se), <i>v.r.</i> , to be composed		cordons, <i>s.m.</i> , string
comprendre, <i>v.a.</i> , to understand, to comprehend		correctement, <i>adv.</i> , correctly
compromettre (se), <i>v.r.</i> , to compromise one's self		
compte, <i>s.m.</i> , account		

côte, *s.f.*, rib, cost
 côtelette, *s.f.*, outlet, chop
 cotte, *s.f.*, petticoat
 cotillon, *s.m.*, under-
 petticoat
 couleur, *s.f.*, colour
 coupable, *adj.*, guilty
 couple, *s.m.*, couple
 couplet, *s.m.*, verse (of a
 song)
 coup, *s.m.*, blow, stroke,
 knock; tout-à-coup,
 all at once
 couper, *v.a.*, to cut
 coupon, *s.m.*, coupon
 coupure, *s.f.*, cut
 courage, *s.m.*, courage
 courageux, -se, *adj.*,
 courageous
 coureur, *s.m.*, runner
 court, *adj.*, short
 cousin, *s.m.*, cousin
 coussin, *s.m.*, cushion
 coussinet, *s.m.*, little
 cushion
 couteau, *s.m.*, knife
 coutelier, *s.m.*, cutler
 couvée, *s.f.*, brood
 couver, *v.a.*, to hatch
 cracher, *v.n.*, to spit
 crachoir, *s.m.*, spittoon
 craignez, *v.a.*, (see crain-
 dre, p. 127)
 craindre, *v.a.*, to fear
 crainte, *s.f.*, fear
 cravate, *s.f.*, cravat,
 necktie
 crayon, *s.m.*, pencil
 crédule, *adj.*, credulous
 crédulité, *s.f.*, credulity
 cri, *s.m.*, cry
 crier, *v.n.*, to cry
 cristal, *s.m.*, crystal
 critiquer, *v.a.*, to criticise
 croc, *s.m.*, hook
 crochet, *s.m.*, little hook
 croire, *v.a.n.*, to believe
 crois, -croit, *ind.pres.* of
 croire
 croisée, *s.f.*, window

croître, *v.n.*, to grow
 croix, *s.f.*, cross; croisil-
 lon, cross-bar
 croquer, *v.a.*, to crunch,
 to sketch
 croquis, *s.m.*, sketch
 croûte, *s.f.*, crust
 croyance, *s.f.*, belief
 croyant, *v.a.*, *p.pr.* of
 croire
 croyant, *s.m.*, believer
 croyez, *imp.* of croire
 cru, *v.*, *p.past* of croire
 cru, *adj.*, raw, crude
 crû, *v.*, *p.past* of croître
 crû, *s.m.*, growth, growing
 cruanté, *s.f.*, cruelty
 cruel, -le, *adj.*, cruel, un-
 kind
 cueillir, *v.a.*, to gather,
 to pluck
 cuiller, *s.f.*, spoon
 cuillerée, *s.f.*, spoonful
 cuir, *s.m.*, leather
 cuisine, *s.f.*, kitchen
 cuisinier, *s.m.*, cook
 cypres, *s.m.*, cypress

D

danger, *s.m.*, danger
 dans, *prep.*, in, into
 danser, *v.a.n.*, to dance
 danseur, -se, *s.m.f.*, dancer
 dame, *s.f.*, lady
 dame, *int.*, indeed, well
 de, *prep.*, of
 de, *art.*, *def.* or *part.*,
 (instead of du, de la,
 des), some, any
 déclinaison, *s.f.*, declen-
 sion
 décliner, *v.a.*, to decline
 déballer, *v.a.*, to unpack
 débat, *s.m.*, debate
 débattre, *v.a.*, to discuss
 débitant, *s.m.*, retailer
 débiter, *v.a.*, to retail
 débrouiller, *v.a.*, to un-
 ravel

début, *s.m.*, beginning
 débiter, *v.n.*, to begin
 décaeter, *v.a.*, to open
 (a letter)
 décevoir, *v.a.*, to deceive
 décider, *v.a.*, to decide
 se décider, *v.r.*, to come
 to a decision, to make
 up one's mind
 déclarer, *v.a.*, to declare
 défailir, *v.n.*, to fall, to
 decay, to faint
 défaire, *v.a.*, to undo, to
 defeat, to rout
 défaut, *s.m.*, defect, fault
 défendre, *v.a.*, to forbid,
 to defend
 défendeur, *s.m.*, -eresse,
s.f., defendant
 défiant, *adj.*, distrustful
 définir, *v.a.*, to define
 dégât, *s.m.*, damage,
 waste
 dégrader (se), *v.r.*, to
 degrade or disgrace
 one's self
 déjeuner, *v.n.*, to break-
 fast
 déjeuner, *s.m.*, breakfast
 délateur, *s.m.*, délatrice,
f., informer
 délicieux, -se, *adj.*, deli-
 cious
 délivrance, *s.f.*, deliver-
 ance
 délivrer, *v.a.*, to deliver
 démarcher, *s.f.*, step, pro-
 ceeding
 demain, *adv.*, to-morrow
 demande, *s.f.*, request,
 question
 demander, *v.a.*, to ask
 demeure, *s.f.*, abode,
 dwelling
 demeurer, *v.n.*, to live,
 to remain, to stay
 demi-fermé, *adj.*, half-
 closed, partly closed
 demi-fin, *adj.*, half-fine
 demi-mort, *adj.*, half-dead

domi-nu, *adj.*, half-naked
 démôlir, *v.a.*, to demolish,
 to pull down
 dent, *s.f.*, tooth
 dentelle, *s.f.*, lace
 dentier, *s.m.*, set of teeth
 dentiste, *s.m.*, dentist
 dénué, -e, *adj.*, destitute,
 devoid
 dépêcher (se), *v.r.*, to
 hasten
 dépendance, *s.f.*, depen-
 dence
 dépendre, *v.n.*, to depend
 dépens, *s.m.pl.*, expense,
 cost, charge; à mes
 dépens, at my expense
 dépenser, *v.a.*, to spend
 déplaire, *v.n.*, to dis-
 please
 déranger, *v.a.*, to disturb
 des, *art.pl.*, of the, of;
 from tho, from; some,
 any
 désir, *s.m.*, desire, wish
 désirer, *v.a.*, to desire, to
 wish for
 désobéir, *v.n.*, to disobey
 dessein, *s.m.*, design,
 project
 dessin, *s.m.*, drawing
 détail, *s.m.*, detail, *pl.*
 details, particulars
 détourner (se), to go out of
 one's way, to turn away
 détromper, *v.a.*, to un-
 deceive
 détruire, *v.a.*, to destroy
 deuil, *s.m.*, mourning
 deux, *adj.card.*, two
 dévoiler, *v.a.*, to reveal
 devoir, *v.a.*, to owe
 devoir, *s.m.*, duty
 diable, *s.m.*, devil
 diaconal, -e, *adj.*, diaconal
 dictionnaire, *s.m.*, dic-
 tionary
 Dieu, *s.m.*, God
 différent, *adj.*, different,
 various

différer, *v.a.*, to defer, to
 postpone
 dimanche, *s.m.*, Sunday
 dinde, *s.f.*, turkey-hen
 dindon, *s.m.*, turkey
 dîner, *v.n.*, to dine
 diner, *s.m.*, dinner
 diocèse, *s.m.*, diocese
 diocésain, *s.m.*, diocesan
 dire, *v.a.*, to say
 dire, *s.m.*, saying, state-
 ment
 disent, dit, dites, *v.a.*,
 (from dire p. 128)
 directeur, *s.m.*, director,
 manager
 directrice, *s.f.*, directrix
 discret, -ète, *adj.*, discreet
 discrétion, *s.f.*, discretion
 discuter, *v.a.*, to discuss
 disparaître, *v.n.*, to dis-
 appear
 diviser, *v.a.*, to divide
 diviseur, *s.m.*, divisor
 dix, *adj.n.*, ten
 dizaine, *s.f.*, about ten
 docile, *adj.*, docile
 docilité, *s.f.*, docility
 doigt, *s.m.*, finger
 doigté, *s.m.*, fingering
 domestique, *s.m.f.*, man-
 servant; woman ser-
 vant
 donner, *v.a.*, to give;
 donner la parole, to
 give leave to speak
 dont, *pr.prelat.* (par. 103
 to 106)
 dorénavant, *adv.*, hence-
 forth
 dormir, to sleep
 douane, *s.f.*, custom-
 house
 donanier, *s.m.*, custom-
 house officer
 douceâtre, *adj.*, sweetish,
 insipidly sweet
 doux, -ce, *adj.*, sweet,
 fresh, soft, mild
 douze *adj.num.*, twelve

douzaine, *s.f.*, about
 twelve, or a dozen
 droit, *adj.*, straight, right
 drôle, *adj.*, droll, funny
 drôlerie, *s.f.*, drollery
 du (instead of de le) of
 the, of; from the, from
 some, any
 dû, *s.m.*, due
 ducal, *adj.*, ducal
 dur, *adj.*, hard
 dureté, *s.f.*, hardness

E

Eau, *s.f.*, water
 ébarber, *v.a.*, to strip
 (quills)
 ébène, *s.f.*, ebony
 ébénier, *s.m.*, ebony-tree
 ébéniste, *s.m.*, cabinet-
 maker
 ébénisterie, *s.f.*, cabinet-
 making
 éblouir, *v.a.*, to dazzle
 échafaud, *s.m.*, scaffold
 échafaudage, *s.m.*, scaf-
 folding
 échappée, *s.f.*, vista,
 prauk
 échapper, *v.n.*, to escape
 échoir, *v.n.*, to fall, to
 befall, to fall due
 éclaircir, *v.a.*, to en-
 lighten
 échaucissement, *s.m.*, ex-
 planation
 école, *s.f.*, school
 écolier, *s.m.*, school-boy
 économat, *s.m.*, steward-
 ship
 économe, *adj.*, thrifty,
 saving
 économe, *s.m.*, steward
 écrire, *v.a.*, to write
 écrit, *s.m.*, writing
 écrivain, *s.m.*, bill, board
 écrivain, *s.m.*, writer
 écrivassier, *s.m.*, scribbler

écueil, *s.m.*, rock, reef
 écuelle, *s.f.*, bowl
 écuelle, *s.f.*, bowl-full
 écureuil, *s.m.*, squirrel
 édenté, *adj.*, toothless
 édifice, *s.m.*, edifice
 effacer, *v.a.*, to efface
 effet, *s.m.*, effect
 égal, *adj.*, equal
 égarer (s'), *v.r.*, to lose
 one's self, to go astray
 église, *s.f.*, church
 élargir, *v.a.*, to enlarge,
 to widen
 élargissure, *s.f.*, piece put
 in to widen
 élégant, *adj.*, elegant
 élève, *s.2g.*, pupil
 élever, *v.a.*, to raise
 élire, *v.a.*, to elect
 élu, *s.m.*, elect
 émail, *s.m.*, enamel
 emballer, *v.a.*, to pack up
 embarras, *s.m.*, encum-
 brance, trouble
 emboucher, *v.a.*, to put
 (a wind instrument)
 to one's mouth
 embouchure, *s.f.*, mouth
 of a river
 embrassade, *s.f.*, em-
 brace
 embrasser, *v.a.*, to em-
 brace
 émigrant, *s.m.*, emigrant
 émigrer, *v.a.*, to emi-
 grate
 émuvoir, *v.a.*, to move
 empresser (s'), *v.r.*, to
 hasten
 en, *prep.*, in, into
 en, *adv.*, from thence
 en, *pr.pers.* (page 56)
 enchanteur, *s.m.*, en-
 chanter
 enchanteresse, *s.f.*, en-
 chantress
 enchérir, *v.a.*, to raise
 (prices)
 enchérir sur, *s.m.*, bidder

encore, *adv.*, still, yet,
 again
 encre, *s.f.*, ink
 encrier, *s.m.*, inkstand
 endenté, *adj.*, with teeth
 énergique, *adj.*, energetic
 enfant, *s.m.*, infant, baby,
 child
 enfantin, *adj.*, childish
 enfiler, *v.a.*, to thread
 enfilade, *s.f.*, suite of
 rooms, long string
 enjambe, *v.a.*, to stride
 enjambée, *s.f.*, stride
 enjoindre, *v.a.*, to enjoin,
 to direct
 ennemi, *s.m.*, enemy, foe
 ennui, *s.m.*, wearisome-
 ness, care
 énoncer, *v.a.*, to express ;
 s'énoncer, to express
 one's-self, to be ex-
 pressed
 engorgeiller (s'), *v.r.*, to
 boast
 enquérir (s'), to inquire,
 to ask
 enrhumé (s'), to catch
 a cold
 enrichir, *v.a.*, to enrich
 entabler, *v.a.*, to entable
 entablement, *s.m.*, en-
 tablature
 entendre, *v.a.n.*, to hear,
 to understand
 entêté, *adj.*, obstinate
 entre-côte, *s.m.*, meat
 between the ribs
 entrelarder, *v.a.*, to in-
 terlard
 entremets, *s.m.*, side-
 dish
 entremettre, *v.a.*, to in-
 terpose
 entrepont, *s.m.*, between
 the decks
 entreprendre, *v.a.*, to
 undertake
 entreprise, *s.f.*, enter-
 prising, undertaking

entrée, *s.f.*, entrance
 entrer, *v.n.*, to enter
 entresol, *s.m.*, mez-
 zanine
 envahir, *v.a.*, to invade
 envers, *pr.*, towards, to
 envi (à l'), *adv.*, in emu-
 lation of each other,
 vying with each other
 envie, *s.f.*, envy, wish,
 longing
 envoyer, *v.a.*, to send
 épais, -se, *adj.*, thick
 épanchement, *s.m.*, dis-
 charge, overflow, (*fig.*)
 overflow, outburst
 épancher, *v.a.*, to pour
 out, (*fig.*) to vent, to
 discharge
 épée, *s.f.*, sword
 épiscopal, *adj.*, episcopal
 épître, *s.f.*, epistle
 équestre, *adj.*, equestrian
 équivaloir, *v.n.*, to be
 equivalent, to be tan-
 tamount
 ermite, *s.m.*, hermit
 ermitage, *s.m.*, hermi-
 tage
 erreur, *s.f.*, error, mis-
 take
 esclavage, *s.m.*, slavery
 esclave, *s.m.f.*, slave
 espérance, *s.f.*, hope
 espiègle, *adj.*, frolicsome
 espièglerie, *s.f.*, frolic
 esprit, *s.m.*, wit ; avoir
 de l'esprit, to be witty
 esquiver (s'), *v.r.*, to
 steal away
 essentiel, -le, *adj.*, essen-
 tial
 estime, *s.m.*, esteem
 estimer, *v.a.*, to esteem
 établir, *v.a.*, to establish
 établissement, *s.m.*, esta-
 blishment
 été, *s.m.*, summer
 éteindre, *v.a.*, to extin-
 guish, to put out

étendre, *v.c.*, to extend
 étendue, *s.f.*, extent
 étoile, *s.f.*, star
 étranger, *ère, adj.*, foreign
 étroit, *adj.*, narrow, light
 européen, *adj.*, European
 éventail, *s.m.*, fan
 éviter, *v.a.*, to avoid
 excellent, *adj.*, excellent
 excès, *s.m.*, excess, abuse
 excuse, *s.f.*, excuse, apology
 exemple, *s.m.*, example
 exhaler, *v.a.*, to exhale, to emit
 exigeant, *adj.*, particular, unreasonable
 exiger, *v.a.*, to exact, to require
 exigü, *-ité, adj.*, small, slender, slight
 expédient, *adj.*, expedient, advisable
 expédient, *s.m.*, expedient, device
 expédient, *v.a.*, from expédier, to dispatch
 exposer, *v.a.*, to expose
 exprès, *s.m.*, express, courier
 exprès-esse, *adj.*, express
 exprès, *adv.*, purposely
 expressément, *adv.*, expressly
 externat, *s.m.*, day-school
 externe, *s.m.*, day-pupil

V

Facade, *s.f.*, front (of a building)
 face, *s.f.*, face
 facette, *s.f.*, facet
 fâcher (se) *v.r.*, to get angry
 facile, *adj.*, easy
 facilité, *s.f.*, facility
 façon, *s.f.*, fashion, way
 fade, *adj.*, tasteless
 faible, *adj.*, weak, feeble

faiblesse, *s.f.*, weakness, feebleness
 fainéant, *adj.*, idle, lazy
 fainéantise, *s.f.*, idleness, laziness
 faire, *v.a.n.*, to do, to make
 falloir, *v.imp.*, to be necessary
 famille, *s.f.*, family
 fatal, *adj.*, fatal
 fatiguer (se), *v.r.*, to fatigue or to tire one's self
 faucheur, *-euse, s.m.f.*, mower; (*fem.*) a mowing machine
 faute, *s.f.*, fault, mistake
 fauteuil, *s.m.*, arm-chair
 favorable, *adj.*, favourable
 favori, *-te, adj.*, favourite
 fébrile, *adj.*, febrile
 félon, *adj.*, felonious
 félonie, *s.f.*, treason
 fendre, *v.a.*, to split; fendre la presse, to squeeze through the throng
 fermage, *s.m.*, rent (of a farm)
 ferme, *s.f.*, farm
 ferme, *adj.*, firm
 fermeté, *s.f.*, firmness
 fermer, *v.a.*, to close
 fermier, *s.m.*, farmer
 fermoir, *s.m.*, clasp
 féroce, *adj.*, fierce, ferocious
 ferrer, *v.a.*, to put iron to, to shoe (a horse)
 ferrure, *s.f.*, iron-work
 festin, *s.m.*, feast, banquet
 fête, *s.f.*, feast, festival
 feu, *s.m.*, fire
 feuillage, *s.m.*, foliage
 feuille, *s.f.*, leaf
 feuillet, *s.m.*, leaflet
 fidèle, *adj.*, faithful
 fier, *adj.*, proud
 figure, *s.f.*, figure, face

fier, (se), *v.r.*, (*à, sur, en*) to trust, to confide (in), to rely (on)
 fil, *s.m.*, thread
 filasse, *s.f.*, tow
 fille, *s.f.*, daughter, child
 filleul, *s.m.*, godson, god-child
 fils, *s.m.*, son, boy
 fin, *adj.*, fine, sharp, shrewd
 finaud, *adj.*, artful, cunning
 finir, *v.a.*, to finish, to end
 flâner, *v.n.*, to lounge
 flâneur, *s.m.*, lounge
 flatteur, *-se, s.m.f.*, flatterer, *adj.*, flattering
 flétrir, (se) *v.r.*, to wither
 flétrissure, *s.f.*, withering, disgrace
 fleur, *s.f.*, flower
 fleurir, *v.n.*, to blossom, to flourish
 fleuriste, *s.m.*, flower-seller, flower-maker, flower gardener, florist
 fonction, *s.f.*, duty, function
 fondateur, *-trice, s.m.f.*, founder
 fondement, *s.m.*, foundation
 fondre, *v.a.*, to melt
 forêt, *s.f.*, forest
 forme, *s.f.*, shape, mould
 format, *s.m.*, size (of a book)
 fortune, *s.f.*, fortune, wealth
 fou, fol, folle, *adj.*, mad, foolish; follet, *-te, play-ful*, foolish
 foudre, *s.f.*, lightning, thunder, thunderbolt
 fondroyant, *adj.*, thundering, thunder-attacking

loup, *s.m.*, whip
 fourbe, *s.m.*, knave,
 cheat
 fourberie, *s.f.*, knavery
 fourche, *s.f.*, pitchfork
 fourchette, *s.f.*, fork
 fournir, *v.a.*, to furnish
 fournisseur, *s.m.*, pur-
 veyor
 frais, fraîche, *adj.*, fresh,
 cool
 Français, *s.m.*, French-
 man
 franc, -che, *adj.*, free,
 frank
 franchise, *s.f.*, freedom,
 frankness, franchise
 fraude, *s.f.*, fraud, de-
 ceit
 frémir, *v.n.*, to shudder,
 to quiver
 frémissement, *s.m.*, shud-
 der, thrill
 fréquenter, *v.a.*, to fre-
 quent
 frère, *s.m.*, brother
 frivole, *adj.*, frivolous
 froment, *s.m.*, wheat
 fruiterie, *s.f.*, fruitery
 fuir, *v.n.*, to flee, to
 fly
 fumer, *v.a.*, to smoke
 fumée, *s.f.*, smoke
 fusil, *s.m.*, gun
 fusillade, *s.f.*, firing, vol-
 ley of musketry
 fût, *s.m.*, cask
 futaille, *s.f.*, small cask
 fuyard, *adj.*, fugitive

G

Gâcher, *v.a.*, to mix
 (mortar), to make a
 mess of
 gâcher, *s.m.*, mess

gagner, *v.a.*, to gain, to
 win
 gai, -e, *adj.*, gay
 galop, *s.m.*, gallop
 galoper, *v.n.*, to gallop
 garçon, *s.m.*, boy, ser-
 vant, waiter
 garde, *s.f.*, guard; se
 tenir sur ses gardes, to
 be on one's guard
 garde, *s.m.*, guard, guar-
 dian
 garder, *v.a.*, to keep, to
 guard
 gardien, *s.m.*, keeper,
 guardian
 garnir, *v.a.*, to fill, to
 trim
 garnison, *s.f.*, garrison
 Gascogne, *s.f.*, Gascony
 Gascon, *s.adj.*, Gascon
 gâteau, *s.m.*, cake
 géant, *s.m.*, giant
 gémir, *v.n.*, to groan, to
 lament
 gendarme, *s.m.*, gendarme
 gendarmerie, *s.f.*, gen-
 darmery
 gêne, *s.f.*, trouble, un-
 easiness
 général, *s.m.*, general
 généreux, -se, *adj.*, gene-
 rous
 générosité, *s.f.*, generosity
 gens, *s.m.*, folks, persons,
 men; les jeunes gens,
 young people
 gésir, *v.n.*, to lie
 gibier, *s.m.*, game
 glace, *s.f.*, ice
 glaçon, *s.m.*, icicle
 glissade, *s.f.*, slip
 glisser, *v.n.*, to glide, to slip
 golfe, *s.m.*, gulf
 gomme, *s.f.*, gum
 gommier, *s.m.*, gum-tree
 gorger, *v.a.*, to gorge, to
 glut
 gorgée, *s.f.*, mouthful (of
 a liquid), draught

gourmand, -e, *adj.*, greedy
 goût, *s.m.*, taste
 goûter, *v.a.*, to taste
 goûter, *s.m.*, lunch
 goutte, *s.f.*, drop
 gouttelette, *s.f.*, little drop
 gouvernail, *s.m.*, rudder
 helm
 grammaire, *s.f.*, gram-
 mar
 graver, *v.a.*, to engrave
 grand, -e, *adj.*, great, large,
 wide
 gravure, *s.f.*, engraving
 grec, -que, *adj.*, Greek
 grenade, *s.f.*, pome-
 granate, grenade
 grenadier, *s.m.*, pome-
 granate-tree, grenadier
 griffer, *v.a.*, to claw, to
 scratch
 griffonner, *v.n.*, to scrib-
 ble
 grillade, *s.f.*, broiled meat
 grillage, *s.m.*, wire-work
 grille, *s.f.*, grating
 griller, *v.a.*, to broil
 grogner, *v.n.*, to grum-
 ble
 grognon, *s.m.*, grumbler
 gros, -se, *adj.*, big
 groseille, *s.f.*, currant
 groseillier, *s.m.*, currant-
 tree
 grossir, *v.n.*, to become
 big
 guérir, *v.a.*, to cure
 guérison, *s.f.*, recovery
 guerre, *s.f.*, war
 guerrier, *s.m.*, warrior
 guêtre, *s.f.*, gaiter
 guide, *s.m.*, guide
 guidon, *s.m.*, guidon,
 sight of a gun, flag,
 cornet
 Guillaume, *s.p.m.*, Wil-
 liam

II

Habile, *adj.*, clever, skilful, able
habiller, *v.a.*, to dress; s'habiller, to dress oneself
habit, *s.m.*, clothes, coat, dress-coat
habiter, *v.a.n.*, to inhabit
habitant, *s.m.*, inhabitant
habitation, *s.f.*, habitation, abode
habitué, (*s'*), *v.r.*, to accustom one's self
hache, *s.f.*, axe, hatchet
hacher, *v.a.*, to mince
hachis, *s.m.*, Lash
hagard, *adj.*, haggard, wild
haie, *s.f.*, hedge, row, line
haine, *s.f.*, hatred
haïr, *v.a.*, to hate
hardi, *adj.*, bold
hardiesse, *s.f.*, boldness
hasard, *s.m.*, chance, hazard
haut, *adj.*, high
hautesse, *s.f.*, highness
hélas ! *int.*, alas ! ah !
hennir, *v.n.*, to neigh
herbe, *s.f.*, herb
herbage, *s.m.*, herbage
héritier, *s.m.*, heir
heur, *s.m.*, luck
heure, *s.f.*, hour
heureux, -se, *adj.*, happy, lucky, fortunate
hibou, *s.m.*, owl
hier, *adv.*, yesterday
histoire, *s.f.*, history
hiver, *s.m.*, winter
hommage, *s.m.*, homage
homme, *c.m.*, man
honnête, *adj.*, honest
honnêteté, *s.f.*, honesty
honteux, -se, *adj. m.f.*, ashamed, shameful
horloge, *s.f.*, clock

horloger, *s.m.*, clock-maker
hors, *prep.*, out
hospitaller, *adj.*, hospitable
hôte, *s.m.*, host
houille, *s.f.*, coal
houiller, *adj.*, containing coal; bassin houiller, coal-basin
huile, *s.f.*, oil
huilier, *s.m.*, oil-urnet
huit, *adj.num.*, eight
huitaine, *s.f.*, about a week, or a week
humilier, *v.a.*, to humble

I

Ici, *adv.*, here
île, *s.f.*, island
îlot, *s.m.*, islet
imaginer, (*s'*), *v.r.*, to imagine
immense, *adj.*, immense
immensité, *s.f.*, immensity
impatient, *adj.*, impatient
impertinence, *s.f.*, impertinence
importance, *s.f.*, importance
impôt, *s.m.*, tax
imprimer, *v.a.*, to print
imprudemment, *adv.*, imprudently
impunément, *adv.*, with impunity
incendie, *s.m.*, fire, conflagration
inconstant, *adj.*, inconstant, inconsistent
indifférent, *adj.*, indifferent
infirm, *adj.*, infirm
infirmerie, *s.f.*, infirmary
inflexible, *adj.*, inflexible
ingénieux, -se, *adj.*, ingenious, clever

ingrat, *adj.*, ungrateful
inquiet, -ète, *adj.*, uneasy
insensible, *adj.*, insensible, unfeeling
insignifiant, *adj.*, insignificant
instituteur, *s.m.*, founder, tutor, schoolmaster
institutrice, *s.f.*, governess, school-mistress
insuffisant, *adj.*, insufficient
intendant, *s.m.*, steward
intention, *s.f.*, intention, design
intéressant, *adj.*, interesting
intérêt, *s.m.*, interest
interne, *s.m.*, boarder
internat, *s.m.*, boarding-school
intervalle, *s.m.*, interval; *loc.*, à de longs intervalles, at long intervals
intime, *adj.*, intimate
intimité, *s.f.*, intimacy
invariable, *adj.*, invariable
inviter, *v.a.*, to invite
invité, *adj.*, invited
irai, *v.n.*, see aller, p. 112
Italien, *s.m.*, Italian

J

Jaloux, -se, *adj.*, jealous
jalousie, *s.f.*, jealousy
jamais, *adv.*, ever; never
jamais, never
jambage, *s.m.*, stroke (of a pen), jamb
jambe, *s.f.*, leg
jambon, *s.m.*, ham
jardin, *s.m.*, garden
jardinage, *s.m.*, gardening
jardiner, *v.n.*, to garden
jardinier, *s.m.*, gardener
jatte, *s.f.*, bowl

jaillé, *s.f.*, bowl-fall
jaune, *adj.*, yellow
jaunir, *v.n.*, to become yellow
je, *pr. pers.*, I
jeune, *adj.*, young
jeûne, *s.m.*, fast, fasting
joie, *s.f.*, joy
joli, *-e, adj.*, pretty
jouet, *s.m.*, toy, plaything
joueur, *s.m.*, player (*fem.* joueuse)
joujou, *s.m.*, toy
jour, *s.m.*, day; *loc.*, de jour en jour, from day to day
journal, *s.m.*, journal, newspaper
journaliste, *s.m.*, journalist
joute, *s.f.*, joust, tilt, fight
joyeux, *-se, adj.*, joyous, joyful
jugement, *s.m.*, judgment
juillet, *s.m.*, July
jumeau, *s.m.*, twin
jumeau, *adj.m.* (*fem.* jumelle), twin
jupe, *s.f.*, skirt
jupon, *s.m.*, petticoat
jurer, *v.a.n.*, to swear
juron, *s.m.*, oath
jusque (à) *pr.*, to, as far as
juste, *adj.*, just, correct, (*adv.*) chanter juste, to sing in tune
justesse, *s.f.*, justness, accuracy, propriety
justice, *s.f.*, justice
justification, *s.f.*, justification

K

Kilomètre, *s.m.*, kilometer

L

La, *pr. art.f.*, the
la, *pr. pers. reg. dir.*, her, it

là, *adv.*, there, thither;
là-bas, yonder
laborieux, *-se adj.*, laborious, industrious
lait, *s.m.*, milk
laiterie, *s.f.*, dairy
laite, *s.f.*, soft-roe
laité, *-e, adj.*, soft-roed
lancer, *v.a.*, to dart, to throw, to cast
langage, *s.m.*, language
langue, *s.f.*, tongue
langnette, *s.f.*, tongue
lard, *s.m.*, bacon
lardon, *s.m.*, slice of bacon
Latin, *s.m.*, Latin
latiniste, *s.m.*, Latin scholar
lavage, *s.m.*, washing
laver, *v.a.*, to wash
laveur, *s.m.*, washer; laveuse, *s.f.*, washer-woman
lavis, *s.m.*, wash (drawing)
le, *pr. art.m.*, the
le, *pr. pers. masc. reg. dir.*, him, it
leçon, *s.f.*, lesson
lecteur, *s.m.*, reader, lecturer
lectrice, *s.f.*, reader
lecture, *s.f.*, reading; cabinet de lecture, reading-rooms
lévreté, *s.f.*, lightness
les, *art.pl.*, the
les, *pr. pers. reg. dir.pl.*, them
lettre, *s.f.*, letter
lever (se), *v.r.*, to rise
liaison, *s.f.*, union, joining
libre, *adj.*, free
lier, *v.a.*, to tie
ligne, *s.f.*, line
lignage, *s.m.*, lineage
limon, *s.m.*, lemon
limonade, *s.f.*, lemonade
limonier, *s.m.*, lemon-tree
lion, *s.m.*, lion

liquide, *s.m.*, and *adj.*, liquid
lire, *v.a.*, to read
lit, *s.m.*, bed
livre, *s.m.*, book
livre, *s.f.*, pound
livret, *s.m.*, little book
loger, *v.a.n.*, to lodge
logis, *s.m.*, dwelling
loi, *s.f.*, law
Londres, *n.p.*, London
louage, *s.m.*, letting out, hire
Louis, *s.m.*, Lewis
lourd, *-e, adj.*, heavy
louve, *s.f.*, she-wolf
loyal, *-e, adj.*, loyal
loyer, *s.m.*, rent
lu, *past part.*, of lire
luxu, *s.m.*, luxury

M

Mâcher, *v.a.*, to chew
mâchoire, *s.f.*, jaw
machine, *s.f.*, machine
machiniste, *s.m.*, machinist
magasin, *s.m.*, shop
magasinage, *s.m.*, warehousing
magicien, *s.m.*, magician
magnifique, *adj.*, magnificent
maigre, *adj.*, thin
maille, *s.f.*, stitch, mesh, mail
maillot, *s.m.*, swaddling clothes
maint, *-e, adj.*, many
maintenir, *v.a.*, to maintain
maître, *s.m.*, master
mal, *s.m.*, evil
malade, *adj.*, ill, sick
malformé, *adj.*, badly made, ill-shaped
malhabile, *adj.*, awkward

- malheur, *s.m.*, misfortune
 malheureux, -se, *adj.*, unhappy
 malin, maligne, *adj.*, malicious
 malintentionné, *adj.*, evilminded
 malmener, *v.a.*, to ill-treat
 malsain, *adj.*, unhealthy
 maltraiter, *v.a.*, to ill-treat
 malverser, *v.n.*, to be guilty of malversations
 mangeoire, *s.f.*, manger
 manger, *v.a.*, to eat
 manger, *s.m.*, eating
 manquer, *v.n.*, to fail, to miss; manquer à, to be deficient or wanting (in), to fall short of
 manteau, *s.m.*, mantle
 mantelet, *s.m.*, mantlet
 marbre, *s.m.*, marble
 marbrerie, *s.f.*, marble-cutting, marble yard
 marchand, -e, *adj.*, saleable, trading
 marchand, *s.m.*, dealer, tradesman, merchant
 marchandise, *s.f.*, merchandise, goods
 maréchal, *s.m.*, farrier, marshal
 mari, *s.m.*, husband
 mariage, *s.m.*, marriage
 marin, *s.m.*, seaman, sailor
 Maroc, *s.m.*, Morocco
 Marocain, *s.m.*, native of Morocco
 maque, *s.f.*, mark
 marquis, *s.m.*, marquis
 marquisat, *s.m.*, marquisate
 marteau, *s.m.*, hammer
 martelet, *s.m.*, little hammer
 martyr, *s.m.*, martyr
 matin, *s.m.*, morning
 matinée, *s.f.*, morning, forenoon
 méchanteté, *s.f.*, wickedness
 méchant, *adj.*, wicked, bad, naughty
 méchant, *s.m.*, wicked (person)
 médaille, *s.f.*, medal
 médailler, *v.a.*, to give a medal to
 médaillier, *s.m.*, cabinet of medals
 médailliste, *s.m.*, medal-list
 médaillon, *s.m.*, medalion
 médiocre, *adj.*, middling, indifferent
 médiocrite, *s.m.*, mediocrity
 médire, *v.n.*, to speak ill
 médisance, *s.f.*, slander
 même, *adj.* (see paragraph 84)
 même, *adv.*, even
 ménage, *s.m.*, household, housekeeping, husbandry
 ménager, *v.a.*, to husband, to take care of
 mendier, *v.a.*, to beg
 mendiant, *s.m.*, beggar
 mener, *v.a.*, to lead
 mensonge, *s.m.*, falsehood, story, lie
 mensonger, -ère, *adj.*, untrue, delusive
 mentir, *v.n.*, to lie, to tell a falsehood
 menton, *s.m.*, chin
 mer, *s.f.*, sea
 mercier, *s.m.*, haberdasher, mercer
 mériter, *v.a.*, to deserve, to merit
 message, *s.m.*, message
 messenger, *s.m.*, messenger, courier; *adj.*, le pigeon messenger (Béranget)
 mesure, *s.f.*, measure
 mets, *s.m.*, dish
 meurtrir, *v.a.*, to bruise
 meurtrissure, *s.f.*, bruise
 merveille, *s.f.*, wonder, marvel; à merveille, wonderfully well
 mieux, *adv.*, better
 midi, *s.m.*, noon, midday
 mie, *s.f.*, crumb
 miette, *s.f.*, crumb
 mi-jambe (à), half-way up the leg
 mi-juillet, *s.f.*, middle of July
 mince, *adj.*, thin
 minuit, *s.m.*, midnight
 mi-partie, *s.f.*, half
 mirer, *v.n.*, to aim
 miroir, *s.m.*, looking-glass
 mis, *past part.* of mettre, to put
 mode, *s.f.*, fashion
 modiste, *s.f.*, milliner
 modéré, -e, *adj.*, moderate
 modeste, *adj.*, modest
 moi, *pron. pers.*, 1. subject, I; 2. object (instead of à moi), to me, me
 moindre, *adj.comp.*, lesser, less (with the *def. art.*), the least
 moins, *adv.*, less; le moins, the least
 moisir, *v.n.*, to mould
 moisissure, *s.f.*, mouldiness
 mollesse, *s.f.*, softness, indolence
 mollet, -ette, *dim. adj.*, soft; pain mollet, roll
 mon, ma, mes, *adj. poss.*, my

monarchie, *s.f.*, monarchy; monarchique, monarchial
 monarchiste, *s.m.*, monarchist
 monde, 1. *s.m.*, world, people, company; 2. tout le monde, *pr.ind.*, everybody
 mondain, *adj.*, worldly; mundane
 monotone, *adj.*, monotonous
 monotonie, *s.f.*, monotony
 monsieur, *s.m.*, (*pl.* messieurs) sir, gentleman
 montagne, *s.f.*, mountain
 montagnard, *s.m.*, mountaineer, highlander
 montant, *s.m.*, amount
 monter, *v.a.*, to mount
 montée, *s.f.*, ascent, rise
 montre, *s.f.*, watch
 montrer, *v.a.*, to show
 moquer (*se*), *v.r.* (*de*), to laugh (at)
 moqueur, -se, *adj.*, sarcastic
 morale, *s.f.*, morals
 moraliste, *s.m.*, moralist
 morceau, *s.m.*, bit, piece, morsel; *lit.*, passage
 mordre, *v.a.*, to bite
 mort, *s.f.*, death
 mot, *s.m.*, word
 moteur, motrice, *s.m.f.*, mover, moving-power
 motif, *s.m.*, motive
 mou, mol, molle, *adj.*, soft
 mouche, *s.f.*, fly
 moucher, *v.a.*, to blow one's nose
 moucheron, *s.m.*, gnat
 mouchoir, *s.m.*, handkerchief
 mouiller, *v.a.*, to wet
 moule, *s.m.*, shape, mould
 moulage, *s.m.*, moulding

mourir, *v.n.*, to die; se mourir (*ref.*) to be dying
 moult, *s.m.*, must, unfermented wine
 montarde, *s.f.*, mustard
 moutardier, *s.m.*, mustard-pot
 mouvoir, *v.a.*, to move
 unir, *v.a.*, to provide
 mur, *s.m.*, wall; muraillon, thick wall
 mûr, *adj.*, ripe
 musicien, -ne, *s.m.f.*, musician

N

Nager, *v.n.*, to swim
 nageoire, *s.f.*, fin
 nageur, *s.m.*, swimmer
 naître, *v.n.*, to be born
 naissance, *s.f.*, birth
 nation, *s.f.*, nation, people
 nature, *s.f.*, nature
 navigation, *s.f.*, navigation
 navire, *s.m.*, ship
 ne, *adv.*, 1. before or after aucun, rien, jamais, etc.; no, not. 2. instead of ne pas; not. 3. ne . . . pas, ne . . . point; not, *loc. ne* . . . que, but, only
 néanmoins, *adv.*, nevertheless
 nègre, *s.m.*, negro
 négresse, *s.f.*, negress
 nègrillon, -ne, *s.m.f.*, negro-boy; negro-girl
 net, nette, *adj.*, clean, clear, plain
 netteté, *s.f.*, cleanness, clearness, plainness
 nettoyer, *v.a.*, to clean
 nettoyage, nettoyage, *s.m.*, cleaning, clearing
 neuf, *adj.*, new; nine

neveu, *s.m.*, nephew
 ni, *conj.*, neither, nor
 niche, *s.f.*, niche, kennel
 nichée, *s.f.*, brood
 noué, *s.m.*, knot
 noir, *adj.*, black
 noirâtre, *adj.*, blackish
 noiraud, *adj.*, dark, (complexion) darkish
 noix, *s.f.*, walnut, nut
 nombreux, -se, *adj.*, numerous
 non-payement, *s.m.*, want of payment
 non-sens, *s.m.*, nonsense
 non-valeur, *s.f.*, thing without value
 nord, *s.m.*, north
 Normand, *s.m.*, Norman
 notre, nos, *adj.*, our
 nôtre (*le, la*) *pr.poss.*, ours
 nourrir, *v.a.*, to nourish, to feed
 se nourrir, *v.r.*, to feed, to live
 nouvelle, *s.f.*, news, tidings, intelligence
 nuire, *v.n.*, to injure, to harm, to do harm
 nuit, *s.f.*, night
 nul, nulle, *adj.*, and *pr.ind.*, no, none

O

Obéir, *v.n.*, to obey
 obéissance, *s.f.*, obedience
 obéissant, -e, *adj.*, obedient
 obliger, *v.a.*, to oblige
 obligeance, *s.f.*, kindness
 obstacle, *s.m.*, obstacle
 occasion, *s.f.*, occasion, opportunity
 occuper, (*s'*), *v.r.*, to occupy one's self
 œil, *s.m.*, eye
 œillade, *s.f.*, glance, ogle
 œuf, *s.m.*, egg

officier, *s.m.*, officer
 offre, *s.f.*, offer, tender
 oiseau, *s.m.*, bird
 oisif, -ve, *adj.*, idle
 ombre, *s.f.*, shade, shadow
 ombrelle, *s.f.*, parasol
 oncle, *s.m.*, uncle
 opiniâtre, *adj.*, obstinate
 opinion, *s.f.*, opinion
 orange, *s.f.*, orange
 orangé, *adj.*, orange-colour
 orangeade, *s.f.*, orangeade
 orangéat, *s.m.*, candied orange-peel
 oranger, *s.m.*, orange-tree
 rangerie, *s.f.*, orange-house
 oreille, *s.f.*, ear
 oreiller, *s.m.*, pillow
 orgueil, *s.m.*, pride
 orme, *s.m.*, elm
 ormeau, *s.m.*, young elm, elm
 orphelin, *s.m.*, orphan, (boy)
 où, *adv.*, where, whither
 ou, *conj.*, or
 oubli, *s.m.*, forgetfulness
 oublier, *v.a.*, to forget
 œuvre, *s.2g.*, work
 ouïr, *v.a.*, to hear; ouïr dire, to hear (it said)
 ours, *s.m.*, bear
 ouvrier, *v.a.*, to work
 ouvrage, *s.m.*, work
 ouvrier, *s.m.*, workman

P

Pain, *s.m.*, bread
 pair, *s.m.*, equal, fellow, peer
 pair, *adj.*, equal
 paire, *s.f.*, pair
 palais, *s.m.*, palace
 pâle, *adj.*, pale
 palot, -te, *adj.*, palish
 pampasse, *s.f.*, waste paper

papier, *s.m.*, paper
 parade, *s.f.*, parade, show
 pardon, *s.m.*, pardon
 parents, *s.pl.*, parents, relations
 parenté, *s.f.*, relationship
 parer, *v.a.*, to adorn
 parler, *v.a.n.*, to speak
 parloir, *s.m.*, parlour
 parole, *s.f.*, word
 parti, *s.m.*, party, decision
 partie, *s.f.*, part, portion
 partir, *v.n.*, to set out
 partout, *adv.*, everywhere
 pas, *adv.*, not; see ne
 passage, *s.m.*, passage
 passager, -ère, *adj.*, passing, short-lived, transitory
 passer, *v.n.*, to pass
 passant, *s.m.*, passer-by
 pâté, *s.m.*, pie
 pâte, *s.f.*, paste
 pâtée, *s.f.*, paste, mess
 patience, *s.f.*, patience
 patin, *s.m.*, skate
 pauvre, *adj.*, poor; les pauvres, the poor
 pauvreté, *s.f.*, poverty
 paiement, *s.m.*, payment
 pays, *s.m.*, country, birth-place
 paysage, *s.m.*, landscape
 paysagiste, *s.m.*, landscape painter
 paysan, *s.m.*, peasant, countryman
 péage, *s.m.*, toll, toll-house
 péager, *s.m.*, toll-gatherer
 taxe-péagère, tax, toll
 pêche, *s.f.*, peach
 pêcher, *s.m.*, peach-tree
 pêcher, *v.a.n.*, to fish
 pêcher, *v.n.*, to sin
 pêcheur, *s.m.*, fisherman
 pécheur, *s.m.*, sinner
 peigner, *v.a.*, to comb
 peignoir, *s.m.*, dressing-gown (lady's)

pèlerin, *s.m.*, pilgrim
 pèlerinage, *s.m.*, pilgrim-mage
 penchant, *s.m.*, leaning
 pencher, *v.n.*, to lean
 pendant, *pr.*, during
 pendre, *v.a.*, to hang
 pendu, *s.m.*, hanged man
 pensée, *s.f.*, thought
 penser, *v.a.n.*, to think
 pensif, -ve, *adj.*, pensivo, thoughtful
 percevoir, *v.a.*, to gather in, to collect
 percher, *v.n.*, to perch
 perchoir, *s.m.*, roost
 perdrix, *s.f.*, partridge
 perdue, *p.p.fem.* of perdre, to lose
 père, *s.m.*, father
 perfide, *adj.*, perfidious, treacherous
 perfidie, *s.f.*, perfidy, treacherness
 péril, *s.m.*, peril, danger
 période, *s.2g.*, period
 permettre, *v.a.*, to allow, to permit to suffer
 persévérance, *s.f.*, perseverance
 persister, *v.n.*, to persist
 personne, *s.f.*, person, (*pl.*) people, persons; *loc.*, une jeune personne, a young lady
 personne, *pr.ind.*, page 64
 perte, *s.f.*, loss
 petit, *adj.*, small, little
 petitesse, *s.f.*, littleness, meanness
 peu, *adv.*, little, few
 peu, *s.m.*, a little, a few
 peuple, *s.m.*, people
 peuplade, *s.f.*, tribe
 pierraille, *s.f.*, broken stone
 pierre, *s.f.*, stone
 pierreux, -se, *adj.*, stony
 pillage, *s.m.*, plunder
 pillard, *adj.*, plundering

, pilgrim
s.m., pilgrim
m., leaning
, to lean
during
to hang
changed man
thought
, to think
dj., pensivo,

, to gather
ot
to perch
, roost
partridge
n. of perdre,

her
perfidious,

, perfidy,
ness
ril, danger
period
, to allow,
suffer
s.f., perse-

to persist
, person,
persons;
une per-
ng lady
d., page 64

ll, little
littleness,

, few
le, a few
ople
rbe
broken

s. stony
nder
ndering

pillier, v.a., to plunder
pis, adv. comp., worse
pis, sup., the worst
pistolet, s.m., pistol
pitif, s.f., pity
place, s.f., place
plaindre, v.a., to pity
plainte, s.f., complaint
plaie, v.n., to please
se plaie, v.r., to please
one's self or each other,
to take delight, to be
delighted
plaisir, s.m., pleasure
plancher, s.m., floor,
ceiling
plat, s.m., dish
plateau, s.m., wooden
basin, tray
plein, -e, adj., full
pleurer, v.a., to mourn
over
pleurer, v.n., to weep, to
cry
pleuvoir, v.t., to rain
pli, s.m., fold
pliage, s.m., folding
plier, v.a., to fold
plomb, s.m., lead
plombier, s.m., plumber
plonger, v.a.n., to plunge
plongeon, s.m., diver
(bird)
plumage, s.m., plumage
plumassier, s.m., feather-
seller
plumasserie, s.f., feather-
trade
plume, s.f., feather, pen
plumée, s.f., penful
plumeau, s.m., feather-
broom
plumer, v.a., to pluck the
feathers
plumet, s.m., plumet
plumetis, s.m., needle-
embroidery
plus, adv., more (p. 40, 41)
plutôt, adv., (que), ra-
ther (than)

plusieurs, adj. ind., seve-
ral
poète, s.m., poet
pointe, s.f., point, top
pointu, adj., pointed,
sharp
poire, s.f., pear
poirier, s.m., pear-tree
pois, s.m., pea
poivrade, s.f., pepper sauce
poivre, s.m., pepper
poivrer, v.a., to pepper
poivrier, s.m., pepper-tree
poivrière, s.f., pepper-box
pôle, s.m., pole
polir, v.a., to polish
polisseur, s.m., polisher
polissure, s.f., polishing
pomme, s.f., apple
pommeau, s.m., pommel
pommier, s.m., apple-tree
pont, s.m., bridge, deck
porcelaine, s.f., china,
porcelain; de or en
porcelaine, china (adj.)
port, s.m., port, harbour
porter, v.a., to bear, to
carry, to wear
se porter, v.r., to be,
to do; comment vous
portez-vous? how do
you do? je me porte
assez bien, I am pretty
well
porte, s.f., door
portier, s.m., door-keeper
possible, adj., possible
possible, s.m., possibility,
what is possible; je
ferai tout mon possi-
ble, I will do my ut-
most, all I can
poste, s.f., post-house,
post, post-office
poste, s.m., post, guard-
house, station
potage, s.m., soup
potager, -ère, adj., jar-
din-potager, kitchen
garden

poularde, s.f., fat poulet
poule, s.f., hen
poulet, s.m., chicken
pour, prep., for (before a
infinitive), to, in order
to
pourquoi? conj. and adv.,
why? wherefore? what
...for?
poursuivre, v.a., to pur-
sue
pouvoir, v.n., to pro-
vide
poussée, s.f., push
pousser, v.a., to push
pouvoir, v.a.n., to be
able (to do)
pouvoir, s.m., power
prairie, s.f., meadow
pratiquer, v.a., to practice
précipiter, (se), v.r., to
fling one's self head-
long, to run headlong-
précipiter, v.a., to pre-
cipitate
précipité, s.m., precipitate
précoces, adj., precocious
préférer, v.a., to prefer
préfet, s.m., prefect
prendre, v.a., to take
près, prep. (de), near
presbytère, s.m., parson-
age, vicarage
présent, s.m., present, gift
présent, adj., present
présenter, v.a., to present,
to offer
président, s.m., president
présider, v.n., to preside
presque, adv., almost,
nearly
prêt, adj., ready
prétendre, v.a.n., to pre-
tend, to pretend to, to
claim
preuve, s.f., proof
prévaloir, v.n., to prevail
prévenir, v.a., to precede,
to prevent, to antici-
pate

prévenant, *adj.*, complaisant
 prévoir, *v.a.*, to foresee
 prévoyance, *s.f.*, foresight
 prévôt, *s.m.*, provost
 prévôté, *s.f.*, provostship
 prince, *s.m.*, prince
 princesse, *s.f.*, princess
 prise, *p.p.fem.*, of prendre, to take
 procéder, *v.n.*, to proceed
 procédé, *s.m.*, proceeding, operation
 prochain, *adj.*, near, nearest, next
 proche, *adj.*, near, nigh
 proches, *s.m.pl.*, kindred
 profiter, *v.n.*, to profit
 projet, *s.m.*, project
 promener, (*se*), *v.r.*, to walk
 promenoir, *s.m.*, place for walking
 prompt, -e, *adj.*, prompt, quick
 prononcer, *v.a.*, to pronounce
 prophète, *s.m.*, prophet
 propos, *s.m.*, speech
 talk, tattle, purpose;
 à propos, to the purpose
 proposer, *v.a.*, to propose
 proposer, (*se*), *v.r.*, to purpose
 propre, *adj.*, clean, own, proper
 propriété, *s.f.*, property
 protester, *v.a.m.*, to protest
 protestant, *s.m.*, protestant
 prudence, *s.f.*, prudence
 prudent, -e, *adj.*, prudent
 prune, *s.f.*, plum
 pruneau, *s.m.*, small plum, French plum
 prunelle, *s.f.*, sloe, eyeball

public (publique, *f.*), public

publicain, *s.m.*, publican
 puis, *v.a.n.*, *ind.pres.* of pouvoir, to be able
 puisque, *conj.*, since
 puissant, *adj.*, powerful
 punir, *v.a.*, to punish
 punissable, *adj.*, punishable
 punition, *s.f.*, punishment
 pureté, *s.f.*, purity

Q

Quand, *adv.*, when
 quand, *conj.*, though
 quant (*à*), *adv.*, with, in regard to, as to
 quarante, *adj.n.*, forty
 quarantaine, *s.f.*, about forty, or quarantine
 quatre, *adj.*, four
 quatrain, *s.m.*, quatrain
 que, *p.rel.*, whom, that, which, (*interr.*) what?
 que, *conj.*, that, than, as
 que, *adv.*, how, how much, how many, why
 quel, quelle, *adj.*, what (*parag.* 107)
 quelconque, *adj.ind.*, whatever, whatsoever
 quelquefois, *adv.*, sometimes
 question, *s.f.*, question
 queue, *s.f.*, tail, end
 qui, *pr.rel.sub.*, who, that; *obj.*, whom, that, which; *interr.*, who, whom, which
 quille, *s.f.*, keel, skittle
 quinze, *adj.*, fifteen
 quinzaine, *s.f.*, about fifteen or a fortnight
 quoique, *conj.*, though, although

R

Raot, *s.m.*, band (for the neck)
 rabattre, *v.a.*, to bent down
 rabot, *s.m.*, plane
 raboteux, *adj.*, uneven, rugged
 raconter, *v.a.*, to relate
 raffiner, *v.a.*, to refine; raffinage, refining
 rail, *s.m.*, rail
 raisin, *s.m.*, grapes
 rallonger, *v.a.*, to lengthen
 rallonge, *s.f.*, lengthening
 piece, leaf of a table
 ramer, *v.n.*, to row
 rameur, *s.m.*, rower
 rang, *s.m.*, rank
 rangée, *s.f.*, row
 ranger, *v.a.*, to put in a row
 râpe, *s.m.*, rasp
 râper, *v.a.*, to rasp
 rapidement, *adv.*, rapidly
 rayon, *s.m.*, ray, beam, shelf
 rebuter, *v.a.*, to repel, to rebuff
 rebut, *s.m.*, refuse
 recevoir, *v.a.*, to receive
 récompenser, *v.a.*, to reward, to recompense
 reconnaître, *v.a.*, to recognise
 reconnaissance, *s.f.*, gratitude
 recul, *s.m.*, recoil
 reculade, *s.f.*, backing, retreat
 redevoir, *v.a.*, to owe still
 réduire, *v.a.*, to reduce
 réduit, *s.m.*, small habitation
 réformer, *v.a.*, to reform
 refus, *s.m.*, refusal
 régat, *s.m.* (*pl.* régats), entertainment, feast, treat

<i>régir</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to administer	<i>renoncer</i> , <i>v.n.</i> , to renounce	<i>revenu</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , income, revenue
<i>répasseur</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , administrator, steward	<i>repâtrer</i> , (<i>se</i>), <i>v.r.</i> , (<i>de</i>) to feed on	<i>rêver</i> , <i>v.a.n.</i> , to dream ; <i>rêvasser</i> , <i>v.n.</i> , to muse
<i>régle</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , rule	<i>répandre</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to pour, to spill, to spread	<i>revers</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , back, reverse
<i>regne</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , reign	<i>répondre</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to answer	<i>revêtir</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to clothe again
<i>reine</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , queen	<i>reposer</i> , <i>v.n.</i> , <i>reposer</i> , (<i>se</i>), <i>v.r.</i> , to rest	<i>revoir</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to see again
<i>rejet</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , rejection, shoot	<i>reponsser</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to repulse	<i>revue</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , review
<i>rejeter</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to throw again, to throw back or away, to reject, to set aside	<i>repoussoir</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , driving bolt	<i>riche</i> , <i>adj.</i> , rich, wealthy
<i>rejeton</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , sprout, scion, offspring	<i>reprandre</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to resume	<i>richesse</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , riches, wealth
<i>réjouir</i> , (<i>se</i>), <i>v.r.</i> , to rejoice	<i>reprise</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , retaking, renewal ; à deux reprises différentes, two several times	<i>ridicule</i> , <i>adj.</i> , ridiculous
<i>relancer</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to start anew	<i>république</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , republic	<i>rien</i> , <i>s.</i> and <i>pr.</i> , (page 64)
<i>relier</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to bind	<i>républicain</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , republican	<i>rieur</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , laughter
<i>relieur</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , binder	<i>répugner</i> , <i>v.n.</i> , to be repugnant	<i>rire</i> , <i>v.n.</i> , to laugh
<i>religieux</i> , - <i>se</i> , <i>adj.</i> , religious	<i>répugnance</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , repugnance	<i>rire</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , laughter
<i>remarque</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , remark	<i>réputation</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , reputation, fame	<i>rivage</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , shore, bank
<i>remarquer</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to remark, to notice	<i>requérir</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to request, to demand, to require	<i>robe</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , dress
<i>remercement</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , thanks	<i>requête</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , request, petition	<i>roc</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , rock
<i>remettre</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to remonstrate	<i>réserver</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to reserve	<i>rocaille</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , rock-work
<i>remembrance</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , remonstrance	<i>réservoir</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , reservoir, cistern	<i>rodomont</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , swaggerer
<i>remplir</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to fill again, to fill up ; remplir un devoir, to fulfil a duty	<i>ressemblance</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , likeness	<i>rodomontade</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , swaggering
<i>remplumer</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to feather again	<i>ressembler</i> , <i>v.n.</i> , to resemble	<i>roi</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , king
<i>renard</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , fox	<i>ressentir</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to feel, to resent	<i>Rome</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , Rome
<i>renchérir</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to raise the price of	<i>ressort</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , spring	<i>romain</i> , - <i>e</i> , <i>adj.</i> , Roman
<i>rencontrer</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to meet	<i>ressource</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , resource	<i>ronde</i> , - <i>e</i> , <i>adj.</i> , round
<i>rendre</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to render, to give back	<i>rester</i> , <i>v.n.</i> , to stay, to remain	<i>rondelet</i> , <i>adj.</i> , plump
<i>se rendre</i> , <i>v.r.</i> , 1. to repair, to betake one's self ; 2. to yield ; 3. to give one's self up, to surrender	<i>retirer</i> (<i>se</i>), <i>v.r.</i> , to retire, to withdraw	<i>rose</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , rose
<i>renforcer</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to strengthen, to reinforce	<i>retrencher</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to retrench	<i>ri sier</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , rose-tree
<i>renommer</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to name again	<i>réussir</i> , <i>v.n.</i> , to succeed	<i>roue</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , wheel
<i>renommée</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , fame	<i>revenir</i> , <i>v.n.</i> , to come back	<i>rouge</i> , <i>adj.</i> , red
		<i>rougeâtre</i> , <i>adj.</i> , reddish
		<i>rougeaud</i> , - <i>e</i> , <i>adj.</i> , ruddy, red-faced
		<i>rougir</i> , <i>v.a.n.</i> , to redden
		<i>rouler</i> , <i>v.a.</i> , to roll
		<i>roulade</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , trill
		<i>roulis</i> , <i>s.m.</i> , rolling (of ships)
		<i>route</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , road, route, way
		<i>roux</i> , - <i>asse</i> , <i>adj.</i> , sandy (of the hair)
		<i>ruade</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , kick
		<i>rude</i> , <i>adj.</i> , rough, rude
		<i>rudesse</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , roughness, rudeness
		<i>rue</i> , <i>s.f.</i> , street

ruelle, *s.f.*, lane, bedside
ruer, *v.n.*, to kick
rugir, *v.n.*, to roar
rugissement, *s.m.*, roar-
ing
rumeur, *s.f.*, rumour

S

Sable, *s.m.*, sand
sablier, *s.m.*, hour-glass,
sand-box
sac, *s.m.*, sack, bag
sachet, *s.m.*, little bag
sacrifier, *v.a.*, to sacrifice
sage *adj.*, wise
sagesse, *s.f.*, wisdom
saison, *s.f.*, season
salade, *s.f.*, salad
saladier, *s.m.*, salad-dish
salaud, *adj.*, slovenly
sale, *adj.*, dirty
saler, *v.a.*, to salt
salir, *v.a.*, to soil
saloir, *s.m.*, salting-tub
salutaire, *adj.*, salutary
sangle, *s.f.*, strap, band,
girth
sanglé, *p.part.* of sang-
ler, to strap, to give
blows
sans, *prep.*, without
sans - dent, without
teeth
sans-*façon*, *loc.adv.*, un-
ceremoniously
sans-gêne, *s.m.*, free
manners; *adv.*, un-
ceremoniously
satisfait, *-e, adj.*, satis-
fied, pleased
sauteur, *-se, s.m.f.*, leaper,
jumper
sauvage, *adj.*, wild
savant, *-e, adj.*, learned
savoir, *v.a.*, to know
savoir, *s.m.*, knowledge
savonnage, *s.m.*, washing
with soap

savonner, *v.a.*, to lather
scie, *s.f.*, saw
science, *s.f.*, science
soier, *v.a.*, to saw
se, *sol, pr.pers.*, (*parag.*
95, 96)
secours, *s.m.*, succour,
help, aid
Seigneur, *s.m.*, Lord
séjour, *s.m.*, stay
semer, *v.a.*, to sow
semis, *s.m.*, seed-plot
sens, *s.m.*, sense, mean-
ing
sentence, *s.f.*, sentence
sentiment, *s.m.*, sensa-
tion, feeling, senti-
ment
sentir, *v.a.*, to feel
seoir, *v.n.*, to be becom-
ing
séparable, *adj.*, separable
séparer, *v.a.*, to separate
serrure, *s.f.*, lock
serrurier, *s.m.*, locksmith
servir, *v.n.*, to serve, to
be useful
si, *conj.*, if, whether
si, *adv.*, so
siècle, *s.m.*, century, age,
time, world
siège, *s.m.*, seat
siéger, *v.n.*, to preside
signal, *s.m.*, signal
sincère, *adj.*, sincere
sincérité, *s.f.*, sincerity
singe, *s.m.*, monkey
singerie, *s.f.*, apishness,
mimicry
situation, *s.f.*, situation
sobre, *adj.*, sober
sobriété, *s.f.*, sobriety
social, *-e, adj.*, social
société, *s.f.*, society,
company
sœur, *s.f.*, sister
soigneux, *-se, adj.*, care-
ful
soin, *s.m.*, care
soir, *s.m.*, evening

soirée, *s.f.*, evening,
evening party
soixante, *adj.ind.*, sixty
soixantaine, *s.f.*, about
sixty
sol, *s.m.*, soil, ground
soldat, *s.m.*, soldier
solde, *s.f.*, pay
somme, *s.m.*, nap, sleep
somme, *s.f.*, sum
sommeil, *s.m.*, sleep
son, *sa, ses, adj.poss.*,
his, her, its, one, one's
sortir, *v.n.*, to go out
soulier, *s.m.*, shoe
soumis, *adj.*, obedient
sot, *sotte, adj.*, foolish,
silly
sottise, *s.f.*, folly, foolery
souci, *s.m.*, care, anxiety
soucier, (*se*), *v.r.*, to care
souffrir, *v.n.*, to suffer
souffrance, *s.f.*, suffering
souhait, *s.m.*, wish
souhaiter, *v.a.*, to wish
soulèvement, *s.m.*, heav-
ing, rising, insurrec-
tion
soulier, *s.m.*, shoe
souper, *v.n.*, to sup
souper, *s.m.*, supper
sourir, *v.n.*, to smile
sourire, *v.n.*, to smile
sous, *prep.*, under
sous-axillaire, *adj.*, sub-
axillary
sous - intendant, *s.m.*,
understeward
sous-jacent, *-e, adj.*, sub-
jacent
sous-maitre, *s.m.*, under-
master, usher
sous-marin, *adj.*, sub-
marine
sous-officier, *s.m.*, non-
commissioned officer
sous-préfet, *s.m.*, sub-
prefect

sous sol, *s.m.*, basement
 souvenir, *s.m.*, remem-
 brance
 souvenir, (se), *v.v.*, to
 remember
 souvent, *adv.*, often
 stimulant, *s.m.*, stimu-
 lant
 stimuler, *v.a.*, to stimu-
 late
 studieux, -se, *adj.*, stu-
 dious
 style, *s.m.*, style
 succès, *s.m.*, success
 sucre, *s.m.*, sugar
 sucrier, *s.m.*, sugar-basin
 suffire, *v.n.*, to suffice
 suffisance, *s.f.*, suf-
 ficiency
 Suisse, *s.m.*, Swiss
 Suissesse, *s.f.*, Swiss-
 woman
 suivre, *v.a.*, to follow
 sujet, *s.m.*, subject
 suppliant, *adj.* (pers.),
 suppliant, (things) be-
 seeching
 sur, *prep.*, on, upon,
 over, above
 sûr, -e, *adj.*, sure, certain,
 safe
 sûreté, *s.f.*, safety
 surface, *s.f.*, surface
 surmonter, *v.a.*, to over-
 come, to surmount
 surnager, *v.n.*, to float
 (upon the surface), to
 swim
 surpasser, *v.a.*, to sur-
 pass
 surprendre, *v.a.*, to sur-
 prise
 surseoir, *v.n.*, to respite
 surveiller, *v.a.*, to watch
 suspendre, *v.a.*, to sus-
 pend
 syllabe, *s.f.*, syllable
 symbole, *s.m.*, symbol
 syndic, *s.m.*, syndico
 syndicat, *s.m.*, syndicate

T

Table, *s.f.*, table
 tablée, *s.f.*, tablefull
 tableau, *s.m.*, picture,
 painting, table, board
 tablette, *s.f.*, tablet
 tablier, *s.m.*, apron
 tache, *s.f.*, spot, stain,
 blot
 tacher, *v.a.*, to spot
 tâche, *s.f.*, task
 tâcher, *v.n.*, to endeavour
 tailler, *v.a.*, to cut
 tailleur, *s.m.*, tailor
 taillis, *s.m.*, copse
 tante, *s.f.*, aunt
 taper, *v.a.*, to smack, to
 hit
 tapis, *s.m.*, carpet
 tapissier, *s.m.*, uphol-
 sterer
 tapoter, *v.a.*, to pat
 tard, *adv.*, late
 tarte, *s.f.*, tart
 tartelette, *s.f.*, tartlet
 teindre, *v.a.*, to dye
 tel, telle, *adj.* and *pr.ind.*,
 such
 télégramme, *s.m.*, tele-
 gram
 témoignage, *s.m.*, testi-
 mony
 témoigner, *v.a.*, to testify
 tempérance, *s.f.*, temper-
 ance
 température, *s.f.*, tem-
 perature
 tempérer, *v.a.*, to temper
 tempête, *s.f.*, tempest,
 storm
 tendre, *v.a.*, to stretch
 tendre, *adj.*, tender
 tendresse, *s.f.*, tenderness
 tenir, *v.a.*, to hold
 terminaison, *s.f.*, termi-
 nation
 terminer, *v.a.*, to end
 ternir, *v.a.*, to tarnish, to
 stain

terrain, *s.m.*, ground
 terrasse, *s.f.*, terrace
 terre, *s.f.*, land, earth
 texte, *s.m.*, text
 thé, *s.m.*, tea
 thème, *s.m.*, exercise
 tige, *s.f.*, stalk, stem
 tigre, *s.m.*, tiger
 timide, *adj.*, timid
 timidité, *s.f.*, timidity
 tirer, *v.a.*, to draw, to pull
 tirage, *s.m.*, drawing (of
 a lottery), pulling
 (printing)
 tiroir, *s.m.*, drawer
 tombe, *s.f.*, 1. tomb,
 tombstone; 2. tomb,
 grave
 tombeau, *s.m.*, 1. tomb
 (monument); 2. tomb-
 stone
 tonne, *s.f.*, tun
 tonneau, *s.m.*, cask
 tonnelle, *s.f.*, arbour
 tonnerre, *s.m.*, thunder
 tordre, *v.a.*, to wring, to
 twist
 tort, *s.m.*, wrong; avoir
 tort, to be wrong
 tôt, *adv.*, soon; tôt ou
 tard, sooner or later
 touchant, -e, *adj.*, affect-
 ing, touching
 toucher, *v.a.*, to touch
 toucher, *s.m.*, touch (the
 sense)
 touffe, *s.f.*, tuft
 toujours, *adv.*, always
 Toulouse, *s.p.*, Toulouse
 Toulousain, *s.m.*, native
 of Toulouse
 tour, *s.m.*, turn, trip,
 tour, trick
 tour, *s.f.*, tower
 tourelle, *s.f.*, turret
 tourmenter, *v.a.*, to tor-
 ment
 tout, *adj.* and *pr.ind.*,
 every, all; *loc.*, tous les
 jours, every day

tracer, *v.a.*, to trace, to draw out
 trahir, *v.a.*, to betray
 trahison, *s.f.*, treason
 train, *s.m.*, train
 traînée, *s.f.*, trail
 traire, *v.a.*, to milk
 traître, *s.m.*, traitress, *s.f.*, traitor, traitress
 tranchant, *s.m.*, edge
 tranchée, *s.f.*, trench, cutting
 trancher, *v.a.*, to cut
 tranquille, *adj.*, tranquil
 tranquillité, *s.f.*, tranquillity
 travail, *s.m.*, work
 travailler, *v.a.n.*, to work
 travailleur, *s.m.*, labourer, workman, hard worker
 travailleuse, *s.f.*, work-woman, painstaking person (woman, girl)
 trentaine, *s.f.*, about thirty
 trente, *adj.num.*, thirty
 très, *adv.*, very, very much
 triage, *s.m.*, sorting
 tribun, *s.m.*, tribune
 tribunal, *s.m.*, tribuneship
 tribut, *s.m.*, tribute
 tricher, *v.a.*, to cheat
 tricheur, *s.m.*, trickster, cheat
 trier, *v.a.*, to sort
 triste, *adj.*, sad
 tristesse, *s.f.*, sadness
 trivial, *adj.*, trivial
 trivialité, *s.f.*, triviality
 tromper, *v.a.*, to deceive
 se tromper, *v.r.*, to be mistaken, to make a mistake
 trop, *adv.*, too, too much, too many, too far, too long
 trou, *s.m.*, hole

trouble, *s.m.*, trouble, confusion
 trouver, *v.a.*, to find, to think, to like
 tuer, *v.a.*, to kill
 tuile, *s.f.*, tile
 turbulent, *adj.*, noisy

U

Ultra-libéral, *adj.*, ultra-liberal
 ultra-mondain, *adj.*, ultra-mundane
 ultra-royaliste, *adj.*, ultra-royalist
 ultra-zodiacal, *adj.*, ultra-zodiacal
 un, -e, *adj.*, and, *subs.*, one
 un, -e, *art.ind.*, a or an
 user, *v.a.*, to wear out
 usure, *s.f.*, wear and tear, usury
 utile, *adj.*, useful

V

Va, *s.p.p.ind. of aller* (p. 112)
 vache, *s.f.*, cow
 vacher, *s.m.*, cow-keeper
 vagabond, *s.m.*, vagabond
 vagabondage, *s.m.*, vagrancy
 vain, -e, *adj.*, vain; *loc.*, en vain, in vain, vainly
 vaincre, *v.a.*, to conquer
 vainqueur, *s.m.*, conqueror
 vaisseau, *s.m.*, ship, vessel
 valeur, *s.f.*, value, valour
 valoir, *v.n.*, to be worth
 vanter, *v.a.*, to praise
 vantard, -e, *adj.*, boastful
 vapeur, *s.f.*, vapour, steam
 varié, *adj.*, varied
 variété, *s.f.*, variety
 vassal, *s.m.*, vassal
 vaut, *s.p.p.ind. of valoir*, to be worth
 végétal, *s.m.*, vegetable
 veille, *s.f.*, watch
 veiller, *v.a.*, to watch; *v.n.*, to set up
 vendange, *s.f.*, vintage
 vendanger, *v.a.*, to gather the grapes
 vendre, *v.a.*, to sell
 vendredi, *s.m.*, Friday
 vengeance, *s.f.*, vengeance
 venger, *v.a.*, to avenge
 vengeur, *s.m.*, avenger
 vengeur, -eresse, *adj.*, avenging
 venir, *v.n.*, to come
 venue, *s.f.*, coming
 verbe, *s.m.*, verb
 verdir, *v.n.*, to become green
 véritable, *adj.*, true
 vérité, *s.f.*, truth
 vermeil, -le, *adj.*, vermilion, ruddy
 vermeil, *s.m.*, silver-gilt
 verre, *s.m.*, glass
 verrou, *s.m.*, bolt
 vers, *s.m.*, verse
 verset, *s.m.*, verse (in Scripture)
 vert, *adj.*, green
 vertu, *s.f.*, virtue
 vertueux, *adj.*, virtuous
 vestiaire, *s.m.*, vestiar
 veux, *v.a.n.*, *ind.p. of vouloir* (p. 124)
 vexer, *v.a.*, to vex
 viande, *s.f.*, meat
 vice, *s.m.*, vice
 vice-amiral, *s.m.*, vice-admiral
 vice-président, *s.m.*, vice-president
 vice-roi, *s.m.*, vice-roy
 vieux, vieil, vieille, *adj.*, old
 vieillot, -te, *adj.*, oldish

v.m., vassal
ind. p. of valoir,
 worth
s.m., vegetable
f., watch
v.a., to watch;
 to set up
e, s.f., vintage
er, v.a., to gra-
 pe grapes
v.a., to sell
s.m., Friday
e, s.f., ven-
v.a., to avenge
s.m., avenger
-eresse, adj.,
 g
v., to come
v., coming
s., verb
n., to become

adj., true
., truth
le, adj., vermi-
 ddy
s.m., silver-gilt
., glass
n., bolt-
 verse
m., verse (in
 e)
 green
 virtue
adj., virtuous
m., vestiar
n., *ind. p. of*
p. 124)
 to vex
 meat
 rice
s.m., vice-
 ent, *s.m.*,
 dent
s., vice-roy
 vieille, *adj.*,
adj., oldish

vigne, s.f., vine
vigneron, s.m., vine-
 dresser
villain, -e, adj., ugly,
 nasty, villainous
vin, s.m., wine
vingt, adj.num., twenty
vingtaine, s.f., about
 twenty
violent, -e, adj., violent
visite, s.f., visit
vite, adj., quick, swift
vite, adv., quickly, swiftly,
 fast
vitrail, s.m., stained
 glass-window
vivre, v.n., to live
vœu, s.m., vow, wish
voici, adv., here is, here
 are
voilà, adv., there is,
 there are

voiler, v.a., to veil
voilure, s.f., set of sails
voir, v.a.n., to see
voiture, s.f., carriage
volable, adj., 1. (persons)
 to be robbed; 2.
 (things) easily stolen
voler, v.a., to steal, to
 rob
voler, v.n., to fly
volée, s.f., flight, volley
volet, s.m., shutter
voleur, -euse, s.m.f.,
 thief
volume, s.m., volume
voter, v.a.n., to vote
votre (pl. vos), adj.pos.,
 your, thy
vôtre (le, la), vôtres (les),
pron.pos., yours
vouloir, v.a., will, to be
 willing

vous, pron.pers., you, to
 you
voyage, s.m., travelling,
 journey, voyage
voyageur, s.m., travel-
 ler

Y

Y, adv., there, thither,
 at home, within
y, pron., (things) it, them,
 (pers.) him, her, them
 (with the preposition
 required by the verb)

Z

Zéro, s.m., nought, cypher
zone, s.f., zone

ENGLISH-FRENCH VOCABULARY.

A

A, *art.ind.*, un (m.), une
 (f.)
 abolish, v.t., abolir
 abominable, *adj.*, abomi-
 nable
 above, *prep.*, au-dessus
 de, sur; above all,
 surtout
 absolve, v.t., absoudre
 accept, v.t., accepter
 accusation, s., accusation
 (f.)
 act, v.t., agir
 admire, v.t., admirer
 advantage, s., avantage
 (m.)
 advice, s., avis (m.)
 affair, s., affaire (f.)
 afflicted, s. and *adj.*,
 affligé
 again, *adv.*, de nouveau,
 encore
 agreement, s., conven-
 tion (f.)
 aim, *v.intr.* (at), tendre
 (à)
 alarm, v.t., alarmer
 alarming, *adj.*, alarmant
 Algeria, s., Algérie (f.)
 all, *adj.ind.*, tout, -e,
 tous (m.pl.)
 already, *adv.*, déjà
 alter, v.t., changer
 although, *conj.*, quoique
 always, *adv.*, toujours

amiable, *adj.*, aimable
 ancestor, s., ancêtre (m.),
 aïeul (pl. aïeux)
 and, *conj.*, et
 another, *adj.ind.* un (e),
 autre
 answer, v.t., répondre
 answer, s., réponse (f.)
 anxiety, s., inquiétude
 (f.)
 any, *adj.ind.*, tout, n'im-
 porte lequel
 applaud, v.t., applaudir
 apply, *v.intr.*, s'appliquer
 apprehend, v.t., pressen-
 tir
 argument, s., argument
 (m.)
 arm, v.t., armer
 army, s., armée (f.)
 arrive, *v.intr.*, arriver
 as, *prep.*, (for), quant (à)
 as, *adv.*, comme, aussi;
 as forward as they,
 aussi avancé qu'eux
 assault, v.t., assaillir
 assess, v.t., répartir,
 évaluer
 attack, v.t., attaquer
 attention, s., attention
 (f.)
 attentive, *adj.*, attentif.
 aunt, s., tante (f.)
 avenging, *adj.*, vengeur,
 -resse (m.f.)
 avoid, v.t., éviter

B

Bad, *adj.*, mauvais, mé-
 chant
 bank-note, s., billet de
 banque (m.)
 battle, s., bataille (f.)
 be, *v.aux.*, être (p. 76)
 beautiful, *adj.*, beau, bel
 (m.), belle (f.)
 because, *conj.*, parce que
 become, *v.intr.*, devenir
 (v.t.), seoir (à)
 bed, s., lit (m.)
 before, *prep.*, avant
 behave, *v.intr.*, se con-
 duire
 believe, v.t., croire (p.
 127)
 bell, s., cloche (f.)
 belong, *v.intr.*, appartenir.
 bend, v.t., fléchir
 benefactor, s., bienfai-
 teur (m.)
 benefactress, s., bienfai-
 trice (f.)
 benevolent, *adj.*, bien-
 faisant
 best, *adj.sup.*, (the, my, le,
 mon, etc.), meilleur
 betray, v.t., trahir
 better, *adj.comp.*, meil-
 leur
 better, *adv.*, mieux
 bill, s., lettre de change (f.)
 bird, s., oiseau (m.)
 bite, v.t., mordre

blow
 board
 lion
 bond
 bon
 boot
 boot
 bottle
 bow
 branch
 bread
 bread
 bread
 bring
 bro
 brot
 bull
 burr
 burst
 bus
 but
 butt
 buy
 by, 2

Cake
 call
 calum
 camp
 can
 cand
 lie
 care
 cargo
 carri
 castle
 cat, s.
 catas
 tro
 anti
 cellar
 cere
 (f.)

blow, *s.*, coup (*m.*)
 boast, *v.int.*, s'enorgueillir, se vanter
 boat, *s.*, bateau (*m.*)
 bonnet, *s.*, chapeau (*m.*)
 book, *s.*, livre (*m.*)
 boot, *s.*, botte (*f.*)
 born, *adj.*, né; to be born, naître
 bottle, *s.*, bouteille (*f.*)
 bow, *s.*, arc (*m.*)
 branch, *s.*, branche (*f.*)
 bread, *s.*, pain (*m.*)
 break, *v.t.*, casser, rompre
 breakfast, *v.int.*, déjeuner
 bring, *v.t.*, apporter; to bring to confusion, confondre; to bring back, rapporter
 brother, *s.*, frère (*m.*)
 bullet, *s.*, balle (*f.*)
 burn, *v.t.*, brûler
 burst, *v.int.*, éclater; burst into tears, fondre en larmes
 but, *conj.*, mais
 button, *s.*, bouton (*m.*)
 buy, *v.t.*, acheter
 by, *prep.*, par, de, en

C

Cake, *s.*, gâteau (*m.*)
 call, *v.t.*, appeler
 calumniate, *v.t.*, calomnier
 camp, *s.*, camp (*m.*)
 can, *v.def.*, pouvoir
 candlestick, *s.*, chandelier (*m.*)
 care, *s.*, soin (*m.*)
 cargo, *s.*, cargaison (*f.*)
 carriage, *s.*, voiture (*f.*)
 castle, *s.*, château (*m.*)
 cat, *s.*, chat (*m.*)
 catastrophe, *s.*, catastrophe (*f.*)
 cautious, *adj.*, prudent
 cellar, *s.*, cave (*f.*)
 ceremony, *s.*, cérémonie (*f.*)

certainly, *adv.*, certainement
 chair, *s.*, chaise (*f.*)
 charming, *adj.*, charmant
 cherish, *v.t.*, chérir
 child, *s.*, enfant (*m.*)
 choice, *s.*, choix (*m.*)
 choose, *v.t.*, choisir
 church, *s.*, église (*f.*)
 circumstance, *s.*, circonstance (*f.*)
 citadel, *s.*, citadelle (*f.*)
 cloak, *s.*, manteau (*m.*); cloak-room, vestiaire (*m.*)
 close, *v.t.*, fermer
 cloth, *s.*, drap (*m.*)
 clothe, *v.t.*, vêtir; one's self, se vêtir
 coal, *s.*, charbon (*m.*)
 coat, *s.*, habit (*m.*)
 cold, *s.*, rhume (*m.*); to catch cold, s'enrhumer
 collar, *s.*, col (*m.*)
 collect, *v.t.*, percevoir
 collection, *s.*, collection (*f.*)
 colonel, *s.*, colonel (*m.*)
 colour, *s.*, couleur (*f.*)
 come, *v.int.*, venir; to come down, descendre
 comfortable, *adj.*, commode
 commerce, *s.*, commerce (*m.*)
 commission, *s.*, commission (*f.*)
 company, *s.*, compagnie, société (*f.*)
 compassionate, *adj.*, compatissant
 complain, *v.int.*, se plaindre
 conceited, *adj.*, suffisant
 conceive, *v.t.*, concevoir
 concert, *s.*, concert (*m.*)
 condemn, *v.t.*, condamner
 conduct, *s.*, conduite (*f.*)
 confess, *v.t.*, avouer, con-

confidence, *s.*, confiance (*f.*)
 confound, *v.t.*, confondre
 confusedly, *adv.*, confusément
 conquer, *p.part.*, conquis
 consecrate, *v.t.*, bénir
 consent, *v.int.*, consentir
 consent, *s.*, consentement (*m.*)
 consequence, *s.*, conséquence (*f.*)
 consider, *v.t.*, considérer, — as, regarder comme
 console, *s.*, consolateur (*m.*)
 contempt, *s.*, mépris (*m.*)
 continual, *adj.*, continu, — le
 correspond, *v.int.*, correspondre
 cost, *v.int.*, coûter
 country, *s.*, pays (*m.*), campagne (*f.*); country-house, maison de campagne; in the country, à la campagne
 countrywoman, *s.*, paysanne (*f.*)
 court, *s.*, cour (*f.*)
 cousin, *s.*, cousin (*m.*)
 cousin, *s.*, cousine (*f.*)
 cow, *s.*, vache (*f.*)
 criticize, *v.t.*, critiquer
 cross, *v.t.*, traverser
 crown, *s.*, couronne (*f.*)
 cruel, *adj.*, cruel, — le
 crystal, *s.*, cristal (*m.*); Crystal Palace, Palais de Cristal
 cup, *s.*, tasse (*f.*)
 curtain, *s.*, rideau (*m.*)
 custom, *s.*, coutume (*f.*)

D

Danger, *s.*, danger (*m.*)
 dangerous, *adj.*, dangereux, —

day, *s.*, jour (*m.*); jour-
née (*f.*)
deal, *s.*, quantité (*f.*); a
great deal, beaucoup
dear, *adj.*, cher, (*adv.*)
cher
death, *s.*, mort (*f.*)
deceive, *v.t.*, tromper
defeat, *v.t.*, défaire
defend, *v.t.*, défendre
delicious, *adj.*, délicieux
departure, *s.*, départ (*m.*)
depth, *s.*, profondeur (*f.*)
deserve, *v.t.*, mériter
design, *s.*, dessein (*m.*)
despair, *s.*, désespoir (*m.*)
detail, *s.*, détail (*m.*)
devote, *v.t.*, consacrer
dictionary, *s.*, diction-
naire (*m.*)
die, *v.int.*, mourir
difficult, *adj.*, difficile
difficulty, *s.*, difficulté
(*f.*)
diligent, *adj.*, appliqué
dine, *v.int.*, dîner
dinner, *s.*, dîner (*m.*)
disappear, *v.int.*, dis-
paraître
discharge, *v.t.*, accomplir
discouraged, *adj. part.*,
découragé
discreet, *adj.*, discret
discuss, *v.t.*, discuter
disgrace, *v.t.*, désho-
norer
disguise, *v.t.*, déguiser
disobey, *v.int.*, désobéir
disown, *v.int.*, discon-
venir de
disposition, *s.*, disposi-
tion (*f.*)
disturb, *v.t.*, troubler
disturb, *adj.*, méfiant
do, *v.t.*, faire (*p.* 129)
door, *s.*, porte (*f.*)
down, *s.col.*, dou-
zaine (*f.*)
drawer, *s.*, tiroir (*m.*)
drawing, *s.*, dessin (*m.*)

dream, *s.*, rêve (*m.*); idle
dream, chimère (*f.*)
dress, *s.*, robe (*f.*)
drink, *v.t.*, boire
drive, *v.t.*, conduire,
mener, pousser; to
drive to despair, ré-
duire au désespoir
dumb, *adj.*, muet
during, *pr.*, pendant
dust, *s.*, poussière (*f.*)
dust, *v.t.*, épousseter;
to dust a coat, battre
un habit
duty, *s.*, devoir (*m.*)

E

Each, *adj. ind.*, chaque
each, *pr. ind.*, chacun;
each other, l'un
l'autre
early, *adv.*, de bonne
heure; as early as, dès
eat, *v.t.*, manger
effort, *s.*, effort (*m.*)
either, *adj.* and *pr.*, l'un
ou l'autre, l'une ou
l'autre
embroider, *v.t.*, broder
end, *s.*, but (*m.*), fin (*f.*)
enemy, *s.*, ennemi (*m.*)
England, *s.p.*, Angle-
terre (*f.*)
engrave, *v.t.*, graver
engraving, *s.*, gravure (*f.*)
enjoy, *v.int.*, jouir de
enslave, *v.t.*, asservir
entreat, *v.t.*, supplier
envy, *s.*, envie (*f.*)
equal, *adj.*, égal
equivalent (to be) équi-
valoir
error, *s.*, erreur (*f.*)
essential, *adj.*, essentiel
establish, *v.t.*, établir
estate, *s.*, terre, (*f.*) pro-
priété (*f.*)
event, *s.*, événement (*m.*)

every, *adj. ind.*, chaque,
tout; tous les; every
body, tout le monde
everywhere, *adv.*, par-
tout
examine, *v.*, (into) ap-
profondir
excellent, *adj.*, excellent
exercise, *s.*, thème (*m.*)
expose, *v.t.*, dévoiler
extremely, *adv.*, extrême-
ment
eye, *s.*, oeil (*m.*), (*pl.*
yeux); eye-glass, *s.*,
lorgnon (*m.*)

F

Face, *s.*, face (*f.*), visage
(*m.*), figure (*f.*)
fall, *v.int.*, faillir
faint, *v.int.*, (away) s'é-
vanouir
fall, *s.*, chute (*f.*)
fall, *v.int.*, tomber; to
fall due, échoir
false, *adj.*, faux (*m.*),
faussee (*f.*)
fan, *s.*, éventail (*m.*)
far, *adv.*, loin
farm, *s.*, ferme (*f.*)
fatal, *adj.*, fatal
father, *s.*, père (*m.*)
fault, *s.*, faute (*f.*)
favour, *s.*, faveur (*f.*)
favourite, *adj.*, favori
(*m.*), étoile (*f.*)
fear, *s.*, crainte (*f.*)
fear, *v.t.*, craindre
feed, *v.t.* (on), se repaître
de
fell, *v.t.*, abattre
field, *s.*, champ (*m.*)
fill, *v.t.*, remplir
find, *v.t.*, trouver
fine, *adj.*, beau, bel, belle
finish, *v.t.*, finir
fire, *s.*, feu (*m.*)
firm, *adj.*, ferme

d., chaque,
les; every
le monde
adv., par
(into) ap-
., excellent
ême (m.)
évoiler
., extrême-
(m.), (pl.)
-glass, s.,

f., visage
(f.)
ilir
(away) s'6-
(f.)
mber; to
oir
ux (m.),
(m.)

(f.)
(m.)
(f.)
(f.)
, favori
(f.)
dre
e repaître
(m.)
(m.)
r
bel, belle

fish, s., poisson (m.)
flattering, *adj.*, flatteur
fleet, s., flotte (f.)
flourish, v. *int.*, fleurir
flower, s., fleur (f.);
flower-bed, planche (f.)
follow, v. *t.*, suivre
fond, *adj.*, cher
food, s., nourriture (f.)
for, *prep.*, pour, à
forbid, v. *t.*, défendre
force, s., force (f.)
foresee, v. *t.*, prévoir
forget, v. *t.*, oublier
fork, s., fourchette (f.)
formerly, *adv.*, autrefois
forward, *adj.*, avancé
fox, s., renard (m.)
franq, s., franc (m.)
France, s., France (f.)
French, *adj.*, français
frequent, v. *t.*, fréquenter
Friday, s., vendredi (m.)
friend, s., ami (m.), amie
(f.)
friendship, s., amitié (f.)
from, *pr.*, de
fruit, s., fruit (m.)
full, *adj.*, plein
future, s., avenir (m.)

G

Gain, v. *t.*, gagner
garden, s., jardin (m.)
gardener, s., jardinier
(m.)
general, s., général (m.)
gentle, *adj.*, doux, -ce
gentleman, s., monsieur
(pl. *messieurs*)
get (up), v. *int.*, se lever
give, v. *t.*, donner; to
give up, abandonner
glass, s., verre (m.)
glove, s., gant (m.)
go, v. *int.*, aller; go out,
sortir
God, s., Dieu (m.)

good, *adj.*, bon, bonne
goods, s., marchandises
(*fam.*, pl.)
goose, s., oie (f.)
government, s., gouverne-
ment (m.)
grammar, s., grammaire
(f.)
grandfather, s., grand-
père, aïeul (m.)
grape, s., raisin (m.)
grass, s., herbe (f.)
grateful, *adj.*, reconnais-
sant
great, *adj.*, grand
greatness, s., grandeur
(f.)
Greek, *adj.*, grec, grecque
grief, s., chagrin (m.)
grind, v. *t.*, moudre (a
knife) émoudre
grow, v. *int.*, croître
guilty, s. and *adj.*, cou-
pable
guinea, s., guinée (f.)
gun, s., fusil (m.)

H

Hand, s., main (f.)
hang, v. *int.*, pendre (np);
suspendre
happen, v. *int.*, arriver
happiness, s., bonheur
(m.)
happy, *adj.*, heureux, -se
haste, s., hâte (f.); to make
haste, se hâter
hasty, *adj.*, emporté
hat, s., chapeau (m.)
hate, v. *t.*, haïr
he, *pr. pers.*, il; lui; ce-
lui
health, s., santé (f.)
hear, v. *t.*, entendre
heart, s., cœur (m.)
heat, s., chaleur (f.)
heaven, s., ciel (m.)
heavy, *adj.*, pesant, lourd

her, *pr. pers.*, elle, la, lui
à elle; hers (*pr. poss.*)
le sien, la sienne, les
siens, les siennes; à
elle (*adj.*) son, sa, ses
here, *adv.*, ici
him, *pr. p.*, le, lui, celui;
himself, so, lui-
même, lui
his, *adj. poss.*, son, sa, ses
his, *pr. poss.*, le sien, la
sienne; les siens,
les siennes; *pr. pers.*
À lui, de lui
history, s., histoire (f.)
holiday, s., congé (m.)
honest, *adj.*, honnête
honourably, *adv.*, honora-
blement
hope, s., espérance (f.)
horse, s., cheval (m.)
house, s., maison (f.)
how, *adv.*, comment;
how much, combien
humane, *adj.*, humain
hundred, *adj.*, num., cent
hungry, *adj.*, affamé; to
be—, avoir faim
hurt, v. *t.*, blesser
hypocrite, s., hypocrite
(m.)

I

I, *pr. pers.*, je, moi (m. f.)
ice, s., glace (f.)
idea, s., idée (f.)
if, *conj.*, si
ill, *adj.*, malade
importance, s., impor-
tance (f.)
immediately, *adv.*, im-
médiatement
impossible, *adj.*, impossi-
ble
pr., dans, en, à
inconsiderate, *adj.*, indis-
cret
industrious, *adj.*, labo-
rieux

infirm, *adj.*, infirme
 infirmity, *s.*, infirmité (*f.*)
 infringe, *v.t.*, enfreindre
 inhabit, *v.t.*, habiter
 inkstand, *s.*, encrier (*m.*)
 insult, *s.*, insulte (*f.*)
 interest, *s.*, intérêt (*m.*)
 intrenchment, *s.*, re-tranchement (*m.*)
 invade, *v.t.*, envahir
 it, *pr. nom.*, il, elle; (*acc.*)
 le, la; (*dat.*) lui (*m.f.*);
 (*imp.*) il, ce

J

January, *s.*, janvier (*m.*)
 jealous, *adj.*, jaloux, -se
 jewel, *s.*, bijou (*m.*)
 join, *v.t.*, joindre
 journal, *s.*, journal (*m.*)
 judge, *s.*, juge (*m.*)
 justice, *s.*, justice (*f.*)

K

Keep, *v.t.*, garder, tenir,
 conserver
 kill, *v.t.*, tuer
 kind, *adj.*, bon, bonne
 kindness, *s.*, bonté (*f.*)
 king, *s.*, roi (*m.*)
 knife, *s.*, couteau (*m.*)
 know, *v.t.*, savoir, con-
 naître

L

Ladder, *s.*, échelle (*f.*)
 lady, *s.*, dame (*f.*); young
 lady, demoiselle (*f.*)
 lamp, *s.*, lampe (*f.*)
 landscape, *s.*, paysage
 (*m.*)
 large, *adj.*, grand
 last, *adj.*, dernier

late, *adj.*, en retard
 lately, *adv.*, dernière-
 ment
 laugh, *v.int.*, rire;—at,
 se moquer de
 law, *s.*, loi (*f.*)
 learned, *adj.*, instruit,
 savant
 lease, *s.*, bail (*m.*), (*pl.*)
 baux
 least, *adj. s.*, moindre,
 plus petit
 least, *adv.*, moins; at
 least; au moins, du
 moins
 less, *adj. c.*, moindre, plus
 petit
 less, *adv.*, moins
 leg, *s.* (of mutton), gigot
 (*m.*)
 legal, *adj.*, légal
 leisure, *s.*, loisir (*m.*)
 lemon, *s.*, citron (*m.*)
 lesson, *s.*, leçon (*f.*)
 letter, *s.*, lettre (*f.*)
 liable, *adj.*, sujet
 library, *s.*, bibliothèque
 (*f.*); circulating library,
 cabinet de lecture (*m.*)
 lie, *v. int.*, gésir
 like, *v. tr.*, aimer
 like, *adj.*, pareil, sembla-
 ble, tel; like master,
 like man, tel maître,
 tel valet.
 little, *adj.*, petit, (*adv.*)
 peu
 linen, *s.*, linge (*m.*)
 live, *v. int.*, vivre; de-
 meurer
 long, *adj.*, long; all day
 long, toute la jour-
 née
 lose, *v.t.*, perdre; to lose
 one's self, s'égarer
 loss, *s.*, perte (*f.*)
 love, *v.t.*, aimer
 loyal, *adj.*, loyal
 luck, *s.*, bonheur (*m.*)

M

Machine, *s.*, machine (*f.*)
 magnificent, *adj.*, ma-
 gnifique
 make, *v.t.*, faire; to make
 happy, rendre heureux
 man, *s.*, homme (*m.*)
 many, *adj. ind.*, plu-
 sieurs beaucoup (*ds*);
 bien (*ds*); many a
 time, mainte fois
 marriage, *s.*, mariage (*m.*)
 master, *s.*, maître (*m.*)
 mayor, *s.*, maire (*m.*)
 means, *s.*, moyen (*m.*)
 meat, *s.*, viande (*f.*)
 meet, *v. t.*, rencontrer;
 (*ref.*) se rencontrer
 meeting, *s.*, rencontre (*f.*),
 séance (*f.*)
 melt, *v.t.*, fondre
 mend, *v. t.*, réformer
 merchant, *s.*, marchand
 (*m.*)
 merit, *s.*, mérite (*m.*)
 merry, *adj.*, gai
 mild, *adj.*, doux
 milk, *v. t.*, traire
 mind, *s.*, esprit; to make
 up one's mind, se
 décider
 mine, *pr. poss.*, le mien,
 la mienne, les miens,
 les miennes, à moi
 my, *adj. poss.*, mon, ma,
 mes
 minister, *s.*, ministre (*m.*)
 minute, *s.*, minute (*f.*)
 misfortune, *s.*, malheur
 (*m.*)
 mistake, *s.*, faute (*f.*);
 erreur (*f.*); to make
 a mistake, se tromper
 moderate, *adj.*, modéré
 money, *s.*, argent (*m.*)
 month, *s.*, mois (*m.*)
 moral, *adj.*, moral
 more, *adv.*, plus
 morning, *s.*, matin (*m.*)

morrow, *s.*, demain; le
lendemain; (*adv.*) to-
morrow, demain
mother, *s.*, mère (*f.*)
move, *v. t.*, mouvoir,
émouvoir
mouse, *s.*, souris (*f.*)
much, *adv.*, beaucoup,
bien; too much,
trop
murder, *v.t.*, massacrer
museum, *s.*, musée (*m.*)
music, *s.*, musique (*f.*)
must, *v.n. def.*, falloir
mutton, *s.*, mouton (*m.*)

N

Nation, *s.*, nation (*f.*)
nature, *s.*, nature (*f.*)
near, *prep.*, près de
necessary, *adj.*, néces-
saire; to be necessary,
falloir
needle, *s.*, aiguille (*f.*)
neglect, *v.t.*, négliger
negotiate, *v.t.*, négocier
neither, *adj.* and *pr.*, ni
l'un ni l'autre, ni l'une
ni l'autre
neither, *conj.*, ni
never, *adv.*, ne . . . ja-
mais
new, *adj.*, neuf, -ve, nou-
veau, nouvel, -le
news, *s.*, nouvelle (*f.*)
no, *adj.*, ne pas . . . de, nul,
ne . . . aucun, pas un, ne
pas or point
no, *adv.*, non, ne . . . pas
none, *pr. pers.*, nul,
aucun, pas un, per-
sonne ne
nor, *conj.*, ni
nosogay, *s.*, bouquet
(*m.*)
not, *adv.*, ne . . . pas, ne . .
point, non, pas
note, *s.*, billet (*m.*)

nothing, *s.pr.*, rien;
good-for-nothing, bon
à rien
notice, *v.t.*, remarquer
nut, *s.*, noisette (*f.*)

O

Oar, *s.*, rame (*f.*)
obedient, *adj.*, obéis-
sant
obey, *v.t.*, obéir
oblige, *v.t.*, obliger
observe, *v.t.*, observer
obstinate, *adj.*, obstiné
obstinately, *adv.*, opi-
niâtement
obtain, *v.t.*, obtenir
of, *pr.*, de
offence, *s.*, offense (*f.*)
offend, *v.t.*, offend; to
be offended, s'offenser
offensive, *adj.*, offensant
offer, *s.*, offre (*f.*)
office, *s.*, bureau (*m.*)
officer, *s.*, officier (*m.*)
often, *adv.*, souvent
old, *adj.*, vieux, vieil,
vieille, ancien, an-
cienne; old man,
vieillard, *s.m.*
on, *pr.*, sur
one, *adj.* and *s.*, un, (*pr.*)
on, se, soi, en
open, *v.t.*, ouvrir; open
again, rouvrir; half-
open, entr'ouvrir
opinion, *s.*, opinion (*f.*)
orchard, *s.*, verger (*m.*)
order, *v.t.*, commander
original, *adj.*, original
other, *pr. ind.*, autre, pl.
autres, d'autres, au-
trui
other, *adj.*, autre
our, *adj. poss.*, notre, nos
ours, *pr. poss.*, le nôtre,
la nôtre, les nôtres, à
nous

ourselves, *pr. pl.*, nous-
mêmes, nous
out, *pr.*, hors
over, *pr.*, sur
owe, *v.t.*, devoir; owe
again, redevoir
owl, *s.*, hibou (*m.*)
own, *adj.*, propre

P

Pair, *s.*, paire (*f.*)
palace, *s.*, palais (*m.*)
paper, *s.*, papier (*m.*)
pardon, *v.t.*, pardonner
(*à*)
parents, *s.*, parents
(*m. pl.*)
Paris, *s.pr.*, Paris (*m.*)
parish, *s.*, paroisse (*f.*)
parish, *adj.*, paroissial, -e,
communal; parish
school, école com-
munale
park, *s.*, parc (*m.*)
party, *s.*, parti (*m.*)
pass, *v.int.*, passer
past, *prep.*, au delà de;
it is past six, il est
six heures passées;
half-past two, deux
heures et demie
path, *s.*, chemin (*m.*)
patient, *s.*, malade (*m.f.*)
pear, *s.*, poire (*f.*)
pen, *s.*, plume (*f.*)
pet, *s.*, canif (*m.*)
perceive, *v.t.*, apercevoir
(*act.*), s'apercevoir de
(*ref.*)
perform, *v.t.*, s'acquitter
de
perish, *v.int.*, périr
perseverance, *s.*, persé-
véance (*f.*)
person, *s.*, personne (*f.*)
pickle, *v.t.*, confire
picture, *s.*, tableau (*m.*)
piece, *s.*, morceau (*m.*)

pistol, *s.*, pistolet (*m.*)
 pity, *v.t.*, plaindre
 place, *s.*, place (*f.*)
 plan, *s.*, plan (*m.*)
 play, *v.int.*, jouer
 play, *s.*, comédie (*f.*)
 please, *v.int.*, plaire
 pleased, *adj.*, content
 pleasure, *s.*, plaisir (*m.*)
 plot, *s.*, complot (*m.*)
 poem, *s.*, poème (*m.*)
 poet, *s.*, poète (*m.*)
 polish, *v.t.*, polir
 politeness, *s.*, politesse (*f.*)
 poor, *adj.*, pauvre; the
 poor, les pauvres (*m.*)
 pond, *s.*, étang (*m.*)
 pope, *s.*, pape (*m.*); Pope
 Sixtus Quintus, le
 Pape Sixte-Quint
 possession, *s.*, posses-
 sion (*f.*); to take pos-
 session, s'emparer de
 postpone, *v.t.*, différer
 praise, *v.t.*, louer
 prefer, *v.t.*, préférer
 pretend, *v.t.*, feindre
 pretty, *adj.*, joli
 prevail, *v.t.*, prévaloir
 priest, *s.*, prêtre (*m.*)
 princess, *s.*, princesse (*f.*)
 principal, *adj.*, principal
 print, *v.t.*, imprimer
 printer, *s.*, imprimeur (*m.*)
 proposal, *s.*, proposition
 (*f.*)
 propose, *v.t.*, proposer
 protect, *v.t.*, protéger
 protest, *s.*, protestant (*m.*)
 provide, *v.int.*, pourvoir
 (for...à)
 provided, *conj.*, pourvu
 que
 prudent, *adj.*, prudent
 punish, *v.t.*, punir
 punishment, *s.*, punition
 (*f.*)
 pupil, *s.*, élève (*m.*)
 put, *v.t.*, placer, mettre;
 put out, éteindre

Q

Quality, *s.*, qualité (*f.*)
 queen, *s.*, reine (*f.*)
 question, *s.*, question (*f.*)
 quiet, *adj.*, tranquille
 quire, *s.*, main (*f.*)
 quite, *adv.*, tout-à-fait,
 tout, -t

R

Railway, *s.*, chemin de
 fer (*m.*)
 rain, *v.imp.*, pleuvoir
 read, *v.t.*, lire, (*past part.*,
 lu)
 ready, *adj.*, prêt
 reason, *s.*, raison (*f.*)
 rebel, *s.*, rebelle (*m.*)
 recast, *v.t.*, refondre
 receive, *v.t.*, recevoir
 recompense, *v.t.*, récom-
 penser
 red, *adj.*, rouge; red
 (head of) hair, cheve-
 lure rousse
 reflect, *v.int.*, (on), réflé-
 chir (*à*)
 regularly, *adv.*, réguliè-
 rement
 reign, *s.*, règne (*m.*)
 rejoice, *v.int.*, se réjouir
 (de)
 relate, *v.t.*, raconter
 remain, *v.int.*, rester
 remember, *v.*, se rappé-
 ler, se souvenir de
 reputation, *s.*, réputation
 (*f.*)
 request, *v.t.*, requérir
 resell, *v.t.*, revendre
 reserve, *v.t.*, réserver
 resolve, *v.t.*, se résoudre à
 resound, *v.t.*, retentir
 retract, *v.t.*, se rétracter
 return, *v.t.*, rendre
 review, *s.*, revue (*f.*)
 reward, *s.*, récompense
 (*f.*)

rich, *adj.*, riche
 ridiculous, *adj.*, ridicule
 right, *adj.*, juste
 ripe, *adj.*, mûr
 rise, *v.int.*, (in price),
 enchérir
 river, *s.*, rivière (*f.*)
 roast, *v.t.*, rôtir
 room, *s.*, salle (*f.*),
 chambre (*f.*)
 root, *s.*, racine (*f.*)
 rope, *s.*, corde (*f.*)
 royal, *adj.*, royal
 ruddy, *adj.*, rouge
 rule, *s.*, règle (*f.*)
 rumour, *s.*, bruit (*m.*)
 rush, *v.int.*, se précipiter

S

Sail, *v.t.*, mettre à la voile,
 appareiller, partir
 sailor, *s.*, marin (*m.*)
 same, *adj.*, même
 sarcastic, *adj.*, moqueur,
 -se
 satisfy, *v.t.*, satisfaire
 (*irr.*)
 say, *v.t.*, dire (*p.* 128)
 scarf, *s.*, écharpe (*f.*)
 scatter, *v.t.*, répandre
 school, *s.*, école (*f.*)
 schoolmaster, *s.*, maître
 d'école (*m.*)
 scold, *v.t.*, gronder
 scribble, *s.*, écrivassier
 (*m.*)
 seal, *v.t.*, cacheter
 see, *v.t.*, voir (*irr.*)
 seem, *v.t.*, paraître (*irr.*)
 sell, *v.t.*, vendre
 send, *v.t.*, envoyer
 sense, *s.*, sentiment (*m.*)
 servant, *s.*, domestique
 (*m.*)
 serve, *v.t.*, servir (*irr.*)
 several, *adj.*, ind., plu-
 sieurs
 severely, *adv.*, sévèrement
 sow, *v.t.*, (on), semer

share, *s.*, part (*f.*), action (*f.*)
 she, *pr. p. f.*, elle
 shear, *v.t.*, tondre
 sheep, *s.*, brebis (*f.*)
 shilling, *s.*, shelling (*m.*)
 ship, *s.*, vaisseau (*m.*)
 shirt, *s.*, chemise (*f.*)
 shoe, *s.*, soulier (*m.*)
 shore, *s.*, rivage (*m.*)
 show, *v.t.*, montrer
 shut, *v.t.*, fermer
 shatter, *s.*, volet (*m.*)
 sincere, *adj.*, sincère
 sing, *v.t.*, chanter
 sister, *s.*, sœur (*f.*)
 sit, *v.t.*, sit down, s'asseoir
 situation, *s.*, situation (*f.*)
 skate, *s.*, patin (*m.*)
 slave, *s.*, esclave (*m. f.*)
 sleep, *v.t.*, dormir (*irr.*)
 small, *adj.*, petit
 smile, *v.t.*, sourire
 smooth, *v.t.*, aplanir
 so, *adv.*, aussi; so... (as), aussi, si; autant, tant (que)
 society, *s.*, société (*f.*)
 soften, *v.t.*, adoucir
 soldier, *s.*, soldat (*m.*)
 some, *art.*, du, de la, des
 some, *adj.*, quelque
 some, *pr.*, quelques-uns, quelques-unes, en son, *s.*, fils (*m.*)
 sorrowful, *adj.*, chagrin
 sound, *adj.*, a sound advice, un avis salutaire
 spacious, *adj.*, spacieux, -se
 Spain, *s.pr.*, l'Espagne (*f.*)
 speak, *v.t.*, parler
 speech, *s.*, discours (*m.*)
 spend, *v.t.*, dépenser
 splendour, *s.*, splendeur (*f.*)
 split, *v.t.*, fendre
 sport, *s.*, jeu (*m.*)
 spring, *s.*, ressort (*m.*)
 spur, *s.*, éperon (*m.*)
 stain, *s.*, tache (*f.*)

staircase, *s.*, escalier (*m.*)
 start, *v.int.*, tressaillir (with...de)
 steady, *adj.*, posé
 steal, *v.t.*, voler — away (*v.t.*) s'esquiver
 steeple, *s.*, clocher (*m.*)
 stocking, *s.*, bas (*m.*)
 street, *s.*, rue (*f.*)
 strengthen, *v.t.*, affermir, fortifier
 stretch, *v.t.*, étendre
 strike, *v.t.*, atteindre
 studious, *adj.*, studieux, -se
 stupid, *adj.*, stupide
 subscribe, *v.t.*, s'abonner
 succeed, *v.t.*, réussir
 success, *s.*, succès (*m.*)
 such, *adj.*, tel, telle
 suddenly, *adv.*, soudaine-
 ment
 suffer, *v.t.*, souffrir
 sully, *v.t.*, ternir
 sum, *s.*, somme (*f.*)
 supply, *v.t.*, fournir
 suppose, *v.t.*, supposer
 supreme, *adj.*, suprême
 surprised, *pr. and adj.*, surpris (at...de)
 suspect, *v.t.*, soupçonner
 suspend, *v.t.*, suspendre
 sweep, *v.t.*, balayer
 sweet, *adj.*, doux, douce
 sword, *s.*, épée (*f.*)

T

Table, *s.*, table (*f.*)
 take, *v.t.*, prendre; take back, reprendre; (somebody in a carriage) reconduire
 talent, *s.*, talent (*m.*)
 tax, *s.*, impôt (*m.*)
 tea, *s.*, thé (*m.*)
 tea-pot, *s.*, théière (*f.*)
 tear, *v.t.*, déchirer
 tear, *s.*, larme (*f.*)
 tedious, *adj.*, ennuyeux, -se

telegram, *s.*, télégramme (*m.*)
 tell, *v.t.*, dire
 temper, *s.*, caractère (*m.*)
 than, *conj.*, que, de
 thanks, *s.*, remerciement (*m.*)
 that, *adj. dem.*, ce, cet, cette, ces
 that, *pr. dem.*, celui-là, celle-là, cela, ça, le
 that, *pr. rel.*, (nom.) qui; (acc.) que, lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles
 that, *conj.*, que, afin que; in order that, afin que
 the, *art.*, le, la, les
 their, *adj. poss.*, leur, leurs
 theirs, *pr. poss.*, le leur, la leur, les leurs, à eux, à elles
 themselves, *pr. pers.*, se, eux-mêmes, elles-mêmes, mêmes
 there, *adv.*, là, y
 they, *pr. pers. (subj.)* ils, elles; (when alone) eux, elles; they who, ceux (*m.*), celles (*f.*) qui
 thick, *adj.*, épais, épaisse
 thine, *pr. pers.*, le tien, la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes, à toi
 thing, *s.*, chose (*f.*); everything, tout
 think, *v.t.int.*, croire, penser
 this, *adj. dem.*, ce, cet (*m.*), cette (*f.*)
 thoroughly, *adv.*, complètement
 thou, *pr.p. 2 pers.*, tu, toi
 thought, *s.*, pensée (*f.*); to collect one's thoughts, se recueillir
 threaten, *v.t.*, menacer
 three, *adj. num.*, card, trois

through, *pr.*, à travers
thunder, *s.*, tonnerre (*m.*)
thunderstorm, *s.*, orage (*m.*)
thy, *adj. poss.*, ton, ta, tes
ticket, *s.*, billet (*m.*)
tiger, *s.*, tigre (*m.*)
time, *s.*, temps (*m.*)
timid, *adj.*, timide
to, *pr.*, à
together, *adv.*, ensemble
too, *adv.*, trop
torment, *v.t.*, tourmenter; torment one's self, se tourmenter
towards, *pr.*, envers, vers
town, *s.*, ville (*f.*)
toy, *s.*, joujou (*m.*)
train, *s.*, train (*m.*)
translate, *v.t.*, traduire
treachery, *s.*, trahison (*f.*)
treachise, *s.*, trahitè (*m.*)
tree, *s.*, arbre (*m.*)
tribute, *s.*, tribut (*m.*)
trifling, *adj.*, léger
troop, *s.*, troupe (*f.*)
trunk, *s.*, malle (*f.*), tronc (*m.*)
trust, *v.t.*, se fier à
truth, *s.*, vérité (*f.*)
tune (in), *loc.*, juste
Turkish, *adj.*, ture, turque
two, *adj. num.*, deux

U

Undeceive, *v.t.*, dé-tromper; undeceive one's self, se dé-tromper
under, *pr.*, sous
undergo, *v.t.*, subir
understand, *v.t.*, com-prendre

undertaking, *s.*, entre-prise (*f.*)
unfeeling, *adj.*, insen-sible
unfurnish, *v.t.*, dégarnir
ungrateful, *adj.*, ingrat
unless, *conj.*, à moins que
unpolite, *adj.*, impoli
unravel, *v.t.*, débrouiller
unwell, *adj.*, indisposé, souffrant
use, *s.*, usage (*m.*)
useful, *adj.*, utile
uselessly, *adv.*, en vain, inutilement

V

Vegetable, *s.*, légume (*m.*)
very, *adv.*, très
village, *s.*, village (*m.*)
vinegar, *s.*, vinaigre (*m.*)
virtuous, *adj.*, vertueux, -se
visit, *v.t.*, visiter
voice, *s.*, voix (*f.*)

W

Wait, *v.*, attendre
walk, *v. int.*, marcher
walking, *s.*, marche (*f.*), promenade (*f.*); walk-ing-stick, *s.*, canne
want, *s.*, besoin (*m.*)
warm (a bed), *v.t.*, bas-siner
warn, *v.t.*, avertir
warrior, *s.*, guerrier (*m.*)
watch, *s.*, montre (*f.*)
watch, *v.*, surveiller
water, *s.*, eau (*f.*)
water, *v.t.*, arroser
way, *s.*, chemin (*m.*)
we, *pr. pers.*, nous
weak, *adj.*, faible
week, *s.*, semaine (*f.*)

weep, *v.t.*, pleurer
well, *adv.*, bien
what, *pr. rel.*, ce qui, ce que, qui, que
what, *pr. adj.*, quel
what, *pr. int.*, que, quoi
what? *adj. int.*, quel, lequel?
when, *adv.*, quand
whence, *adv.*, d'où
whereas, *conj.*, tandis que
whether, *conj.*, si; soit que... ou; que... on
which, *pr. rel.*, 1. qui, que, lequel, laquelle; 2. ce qui, ce que; 3. (*int.*) qui, lequel, laquelle? 4. ce, cette, etc.

whimsical, *adj.*, capricieux, -se
whip, *s.*, fouet (*m.*)
who, *pr. pers.*, 1. qui, lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles; 2. quel; 3. (*int.*) qui? 4. celui qui
whoever, *pr. ind.*, qui-conque
whom, *pr. obj.*, que, qui, (*int.*) qui?
wicked, *adj.*, méchant
wide, *adj.*, large
wilderness, *s.*, désert (*m.*)
win, *v.t.*, gagner
window, *s.*, fenêtre (*f.*)
wine, *s.*, vin (*m.*)
wing, *s.*, aile (*f.*)
wise, *adj.*, sage
wish, *v.t.*, désirer
with, *pr.*, avec
withdraw, *v.t.*, se dédire de
wither, *v. int.*, flétrir
without, *pr.*, sans
woman, *s.*, femme (*f.*)
wonderful, *adj.*, mer-veilleux, -se
wonderfully, *adv.*, mer-veilleusement

wood, *s.*, bois (*m.*)
word, *s.*, parole (*f.*)
work, *s.*, ouvrage, travail ; work-box, *s.*, boîte (*f.*) à ouvrage
work, *v.t.*, travailler
worship, *v.t.*, adorer
worth (to be), valoir (*v.i.*)
wound, *v.t.*, blesser
wring, *v.t.*, tordre
write, *v.t.*, écrire

Y

Year, *s.*, an (*m.*), année (*f.*)
yesterday, *adv.*, hier
yet, *adv.*, encore
yield, *v.int.*, céder, se rendre (à)
you, *pr.pers.*, vous
young, *adj.*, jeune
your, *adj.poss.*, votre, vos

yours, *pr.poss.*, le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres, à vous
yourself, *pr.pers.*, vous-même, vous

Z

Zeal, *s.*, zèle (*m.*)